

REMARKS

ON

ECCLÉSIASTICAL

HISTORY.

Διὰ δυσφημίας ἢ εὐφημίας.

VOL. V.



L O N D O N,

Printed for BENJAMIN WHITE, at
Horace's Head, in Fleet-Street.

MDCCLXXII.

EMERSON

BRITANNICA

ECCLIASTICAL

CONSTITUTION

HISTORY



THE BRITISH MUSEUM

1851



CONTENTS.

	Page
L EO the Emperor married a fourth wife contrary to the Greek canons	I
Sergius III. Pope	I
The Normans embrace Christi- anity	2
John X. Pope	2
Trypho patriarch in confidence	3
John XI. Pope	3
Paul the Monk	3
St. Bruno, Archbishop of Cologne	4
John XII. Pope	4
Theophilus the patriarch	5
Otho	6
Edgar's Ecclesiastical laws	7

	Page
<i>Mayeul, abbot of Clugni, re-</i> <i>fused being Pope</i>	7
<i>Suidas</i>	8
<i>Christianity establiſhed among</i> <i>the Ruſſians</i>	9
<i>Ælfric</i>	9, 11
<i>Pope John XV. canonizes Ul-</i> <i>daric</i>	10
<i>Pope Gregory V.</i>	10
<i>Antipope John XVI.</i>	10
<i>Festival of All Souls and wor-</i> <i>ſhip of the Virgin Mary</i>	11, 34
<i>Robert, King of France, ex-</i> <i>communicated</i>	11
<i>Pope Sylveſter II.</i>	12
<i>Realists and Nominalists</i>	13, 480
<i>Kyrie eleiſon and Paralipome-</i> <i>non ſainted, and he who could</i> <i>read Greek paſſed for a Sor-</i> <i>cerer</i>	14
<i>Times of ignorance and ſuper-</i> <i>ſtition</i>	14
<i>A Saxon homily againſt Tran-</i> <i>ſubſtantiation</i>	19
<i>Leutard ſet up as a Prophet</i>	19

CONTENTS.

v
Page.

<i>A Fanatic at Ravenna taught that the Heathen poets should be believed in</i>	20
<i>Many Heretics from Sardinia</i>	21
<i>Peter made Pope by name of Sergius IV.</i>	22
<i>The Jews persuade the Prince of Babylon to destroy the church of the Sepulchre at Jerusa- lem</i>	22
<i>The Jews cruelly treated</i>	23
<i>A false Pilgrim burnt</i>	24
<i>A new head of John the Bap- tist</i>	24
<i>Bouchard Bishop of Worms</i>	24
<i>Manichæans or Paulicians</i>	25, 52, 201, 231, 245, 251.
<i>John XIX. made Pope by money</i>	25
<i>Council of Anse reject a plea of privilege granted by the Pope</i>	25
<i>Simony universally practised</i>	25
<i>Guido the musician invented the gamut</i>	26
<i>Church bells baptized</i>	26

	Page
<i>Tenets of some honest converts</i>	27
<i>Bloody rain</i>	30
<i>Theophylact Pope, by name of Benedict IX.</i>	31
<i>Sylvester III.</i>	32
<i>The Emperor St. Henry, per- suaded to leave off a cruel diversion</i>	32
<i>Casimire, a Monk, King of Poland</i>	33
<i>Abbot Richard's pilgrimage</i>	33
<i>Gregory VI. Pope</i>	34
<i>Leo IX. his letter to the Pa- triarch</i>	35
<i>Division of the Bible into chap- ters</i>	35
<i>Nicolas II. Pope</i>	35
<i>Dominicus Loricatus</i>	36
<i>Trial by fire</i>	36
<i>Alexander II. writes in favour of the Jews</i>	37
<i>Architects brought from Con- stantinople to Italy</i>	37
<i>Adam of Breme's history of Denmark</i>	38
	<i>Hildebrand</i>

CONTENTS.

vii

Page

<i>Hildebrand Pope, by name of Gregory VII.</i>	38
<i>Heretics called Patarini</i>	42
<i>Quarrels about investitures, or right of patronage</i>	42
<i>Anselm, Archbishop of Canterbury</i>	44
<i>Lambertus the Monk, an excellent writer</i>	44
<i>Hugo, Duke of Burgundy</i>	44
<i>Alexius Comnenus, Emperor of Constantinople</i>	45
<i>Ignis Græcus used in war</i>	46
<i>Bogomili Heretics</i>	46
<i>Basilius</i>	46
<i>Carthusian order founded by St. Bruno</i>	48
<i>Roscelinus's opinion of the Trinity</i>	48
<i>The Popes require the public service to be in Latin</i>	50
<i>A custom for Priests to pronounce the words of consecration in the Eucharist submissa voce</i>	53

	Page
<i>Croisades and Croiséz</i>	53, 68,
71, 221, 227, 231, 247, 250,	
353, 355, 358, 361, 372, 388.	
<i>The corruption and ignorance of</i>	
<i>Ecclesiastics</i>	57
<i>Witnesses of the truth</i>	58
<i>Scholastic and mystic divinity</i>	61
<i>Warm contentions between the</i>	
<i>Latins and Greeks</i>	61
<i>The Pope and Patriarch ana-</i>	
<i>thematize one another</i>	63
<i>Berengarius</i>	63
<i>Papa, a name given to all Bi-</i>	
<i>shops</i>	64
<i>Ildebert, Bishop of Mans</i>	64
<i>Trials by fire, water and cakes,</i>	
<i>&c.</i>	64
<i>St. Nicolas Peregrinus</i>	66
<i>Sacrament received in both kinds</i>	68
<i>The Jews persecuted by the</i>	
<i>Croiséz</i>	69
<i>Franks, their behaviour in the</i>	
<i>Emperor's dominions</i>	70

CONTENTS.

ix

	Page
<i>Fleury's Remarks on Ecclesiastical History, from the year 600 to 1100</i>	72—181
<i>" Judgments on Rome for her crimes</i>	73
<i>" Declension of literature</i>	76
<i>" False legends</i>	78
<i>" Temporal promises to Princes</i>	83
<i>" Reliques and Impostures</i>	84
<i>" Pilgrimages</i>	88
<i>" Eastern Church</i>	91
<i>" Clergy become hunters and fighters</i>	98
<i>" Bishops temporalities</i>	99
<i>" Alliance of episcopacy and temporal dominion very mischievous</i>	105, 148
<i>" Abuses in the East</i>	111
<i>" Charisticarii</i>	112
<i>" Wealth of Religious Houses</i>	112
<i>" Simoniacal contracts</i>	114—119
<i>" Impiety and contempt of religion</i>	117
<i>" Marriage of Ecclesiastics, and violence of the Laity</i>	119
<i>" Penances,</i>	

	Page
" Penances, censures, and	
" compensations	126
" Excommunication	130
" Popes depart from modera-	
" tion	136
" Gregory VII.	139, 146
" Mischiefs from the Pope's	
" high notions	141
" Wiser maxims of antiquity	144
" Bishops	148
" Councils	150
" Objects of study and schools	152
" Monasteries and Monks	155, 167
" Ceremonies	165
" Tithes	172
" Divine service in the popu-	
" lar language	172
" Result of this Discourse"	177
Observations on Fleury	182
The strength of prejudice and education	183
Fleury builds on two positions :	
1. That the Church of Rome cannot err ;	
2. That it has not erred	184
	<i>Heresies</i>

CONTENTS.

xi
Page

<i>Heresies of the Church of Rome</i>	184
<i>Infallibility, a dream</i>	186
<i>The Rights of the church and state</i>	186
<i>Church, the sense of that word in Scripture and Antiquity</i>	188
<i>No one fond of excommunication, but those who make a trade of it</i>	190
<i>Conversion of barbarous nations</i>	190
<i>Prefter John</i>	191
<i>Guibert writes an account of the holy war</i>	192
<i>The regard paid to literature and the liberal arts, owing to the Emperor's munificence, and vigilance of the Constantinopolitan Prelates</i>	192
<i>Schools and universities founded</i>	194
<i>Roman Law</i>	196
<i>Henry V.</i>	197, 200
<i>Pope Paschal absolved by a council</i>	198
<i>— excites Robert, Count of Flanders,</i>	

<i>Flanders, to make war with Henry IV. and the Clergy of Liege</i>	198
<i>Robert D' Abriselles</i>	200
<i>The Life of Henry IV. written by an elegant Author</i>	200
<i>Paschal's orders about the Eu- charist</i>	202
<i>Abelard condemned</i>	202, 226
<i>Concordatum between the Pope and the Emperor, concerning the election of Ecclesiastics</i>	202
<i>Bishops, in council, complain of the Monks</i>	202
<i>Tanchelm, a wicked Heretic at Antwerp</i>	203
<i>Guibert's Treatise on Reliques and the Tooth of Christ</i>	206
<i>Otto converts the Pomeranians</i>	208
<i>Joannes Cremensis</i>	209
<i>Knights Templars</i>	209, 236, 247, 430, 467
<i>Two Popes elected</i>	210
<i>William of Malmesbury</i>	210

CONTENTS.

xiii

Page

<i>Tilts and tournaments forbid by</i>	
<i>the council of Rheims</i>	211
<i>Council of Lateran</i>	211
<i>Pope Innocent II. compares</i>	
<i>ecclesiastical dignities to fiefs</i>	211
<i>The Canons of cathedrals claim</i>	
<i>a right to elect their Bishop</i>	212
<i>Arnold de Bresse burnt</i>	212
<i>Controversies about the im-</i>	
<i>maculate conception</i>	212, 221
<i>Massaliani, or Euchetæ</i>	214
<i>Waldenses and Albigenes</i>	215, 218,
	244, 251, 348, 361
<i>Cathari, or Puritans</i>	216
<i>St. Bernard,</i>	223, 226
<i>Saracens, their cruelties ac-</i>	
<i>counted for</i>	225
<i>Gilbert, Bishop of Poitiers</i>	228
<i>Eon, a French Heretic</i>	228
<i>St. Hildegardis, a fanatical</i>	
<i>Nun</i>	228
<i>King Frederic and Pope A-</i>	
<i>drian's interview</i>	228
<i>Gratian's decree</i>	229
<i>Foreign Heretics in England</i>	230
	Transub-

	Page
<i>Transubstantiation, that word</i>	
<i>first used by Petrus Blesensis</i>	230, 359
<i>Joannes Cinnamus</i>	230
<i>Demetrius</i>	230
<i>Island of Rugia</i>	231
<i>Suantovit, the idol, originally</i>	
<i>St. Vitus</i>	232
<i>Saxo Grammaticus</i>	233
<i>Alexander III. Pope, makes</i>	
<i>peace with Frederic</i>	234
<i>— Pope chosen by the Cardi-</i>	
<i>nals under his decree</i>	235
<i>— the first that proclaimed</i>	
<i>war against Heretics</i>	235
<i>— added canonization to the</i>	
<i>major causes</i>	235
<i>— exercised the power of</i>	
<i>creating Kings</i>	235
<i>Thomas Becket</i>	236
<i>Assassins, a sect of Mahometans</i>	236
<i>Rabbins</i>	240
<i>Council at London</i>	240
<i>Order of St. James</i>	240
<i>Petrus Comestor</i>	240

CONTENTS.

xv

Page

<i>A Council of Lateran forbids exactions by Bishops</i>	241
<i>A Council of Lateran requires an estate as an Ecclesiastical title</i>	241
— <i>its canon about societies of Lepers</i>	241
— <i>condemns Peter Lom- bard's Heresy</i>	242
<i>The poverty of some Bishops</i>	242
<i>St. Laurence, Archbishop of Dublin</i>	242
<i>Manuel Comnenus, the Em- peror</i>	243
<i>Lucius III. elected Pope</i>	244
<i>Philip of France expels the Jews</i>	244
<i>The Latins in Constantinople massacred</i>	245
<i>The Sicilians take Thessalonica</i>	246
<i>Eustathius</i>	246
<i>The Livonians converted</i>	246
<i>Saladin takes Jerusalem</i>	247
<i>Jews in England massacred</i>	247

Celestin

	Page
<i>Celestin III. Pope</i>	247
<i>Stercorariæ, the Pope's chairs</i>	248
<i>Pope Joan's statue</i>	249
<i>Teutonic Knights</i>	250, 364
<i>Miracles very common and cheap</i>	251
<i>The Greeks erase the first writing on ancient manuscripts, to write on the same parchment again</i>	250
<i>Innocent III. Pope</i>	251, 359, 383
<i>Order of the holy Trinity</i>	251
<i>Festival of Fools</i>	252
<i>The Pope threatens to excommunicate the Emperor of Constantinople</i>	252
<i>Heretics persecuted</i>	254
<i>The manner of punishing unfaithfulness in Germany</i>	254
<i>The corrupt state of religion</i>	254
<i>Fleury's Discourse on Ecclesiastical History</i>	262—346
<i>“Credit given to false decretals</i>	263
<i>“The</i>	

CONTENTS. xvii

Page

“ <i>The Pope’s consent not</i>	
“ <i>necessary to Councils</i>	265
“ <i>Bishops may be judged</i>	
“ <i>by Councils</i>	268
“ <i>The Pope has no power</i>	
“ <i>of translating Bishops</i>	272
“ <i>The erection of new Sees</i>	
“ <i>belongs to councils</i>	273
“ <i>Suppression of Bishoprics</i>	
“ <i>not in the Pope alone</i>	275
“ <i>The Pope’s authority</i>	
“ <i>supported by false de-</i>	
“ <i>cretals</i>	276
“ <i>Non-obstante clause in</i>	
“ <i>the Pope’s Bulls</i>	280
“ <i>Court of Rome</i>	281
“ <i>Gratian’s decree</i>	286
“ <i>Thomas Becket</i>	288
“ <i>Innocent III, his answer</i>	
“ <i>to the Emperor</i>	289
“ <i>The false foundation of</i>	
“ <i>the Pope’s temporal</i>	
“ <i>power</i>	294

	Page
" <i>Bishops becoming Lords</i>	
" <i>against the primitive</i>	
" <i>institution</i>	297
" <i>No See but that of Rome</i>	
" <i>admits a plea for unit-</i>	
" <i>ing the temporal and</i>	
" <i>spiritual power</i>	306
" <i>The Pope's Legates</i>	310
" <i>Cessation of provincial</i>	
" <i>Councils</i>	315
" <i>The Pope's confirmation</i>	
" <i>of Conventions</i>	316
" <i>Pope's residence and</i>	
" <i>subsidies</i>	317
" <i>The duty of an historian</i>	319
" <i>The rigour of the church</i>	
" <i>condemned</i>	320, 330
" <i>Moderation ceased after</i>	
" <i>the 8th century</i>	328
" <i>Penances changed</i>	330
" <i>Pecuniary mulcts</i>	334
" <i>Indulgences</i> "	340
<i>Strictures on Fleury's disserta-</i>	
<i>tion</i>	346—351

CONTENTS.

xix

Page

<i>Prostration at the Host, and bells used with it</i>	351
<i>The Pope elects the Emperor of Germany</i>	352
<i>The Italian, French, and Spa- nish languages sprang from the Roman rustic</i>	352
<i>Water mixed with wine at the Eucharist; and disputes whe- ther changed into blood, and whether the body of Christ in the Eucharist was received corruptible or incorruptible, and whether Christ performed natural actions</i>	352
<i>Hanging and burning Heretics the universal practice</i>	353
<i>The Croisæz take Constantinople and make a Latin Emperor</i>	354
<i>Louis IX. or St. Louis, his ha- tred of Heretics</i>	356
<i>St. Dominic</i>	356, 364
<i>The Curates at Paris had a dish from wedding dinners as a fee</i>	357

	Page
<i>St. Francis</i>	357, 360
<i>St. Clara</i>	357
<i>Innocent III. foretells the down- fall of Mahomet</i>	358
<i>Brunetto Latini speaks of the mariners compass</i>	358
<i>Transubstantiation</i>	359
<i>King John of England like a a vassal to Innocent</i>	359
<i>Impostors</i>	361
<i>Louis VIII. heads a Croisade against the Albigenes</i>	361
<i>Inquisition</i>	362, 363, 372, 387, 503
<i>A story of a rambling Jew</i>	362
<i>Gregory IX. Papal Impudence</i>	362
<i>The books of the Old and New Testament in the vulgar tongue forbidden</i>	363
<i>Antony of Padua</i>	364
<i>Clandestine marriages declared null</i>	365
<i>Bishop Grossthead</i>	365
<i>Gregory IX. forbids the Greeks to shew the holy fire</i>	366

CONTENTS.

xxi

	Page
<i>Matt. Paris</i>	366
<i>Jewish books burnt in France</i>	367
<i>Flagellantes</i>	367, 384, 478, 489
<i>Feast of the Sacrament</i>	367
<i>Errors condemned at Paris</i>	368
<i>Pragmatic edict against Papal oppression</i>	369
<i>Roger Bacon</i>	320, 381
<i>Communion in both kinds in England</i>	370
<i>Jacobus de Voragine, his legend and translation of the Scrip- tures</i>	370
<i>Joannes de Parisiis, his treatise on the Eucharist</i>	370
<i>A prodigy at Constantinople</i>	371
<i>Raimond Lulle, an Enthusiast</i>	371
<i>A Jew burnt for stabbing the Host</i>	371
<i>Acre taken, and the Holy Land lost</i>	372
<i>John Pecham Archbishop of Canterbury</i>	372
<i>Jews accused without proof</i>	372

	Page
<i>Saracen principles better than those of the Latins</i>	375
<i>Prevalence of the Aristotelic philosophy</i>	377
<i>The liberal arts cultivated by European Princes</i>	378
<i>Frederic II. Emperor</i>	378
<i>Alphonfus X</i>	378
<i>School at various places, and university at Paris</i>	379
<i>Robert de Sorbonne founds a college of divines</i>	380
<i>Philology did not keep pace with other learning</i>	380
<i>Arnoldus Villanovanus</i>	382
<i>Vices of Greek and Latin pre- lates</i>	383
<i>New monastic orders</i>	384
<i>Fratricelli, or Beguardi, and other Sectarists</i>	384
<i>Albertus Magnus, Thomas Aquinas, Bonaventure</i>	384
<i>A necessary caution in reading authors of these times</i>	384

CONTENTS.

xxiii

Page

<i>Cathari, Waldenses, Petrobrusiani, and others, persecuted</i>	386
<i>Abbots, their method of getting riches</i>	386
<i>Bishops and Archbishops, their method of fighting</i>	388
<i>Fleury's discourse on the Croisades</i>	388—458
<i>" Their origin</i>	389
<i>" Indulgences</i>	397, 416, 417
<i>" Ecclesiastics take up arms</i>	400
<i>" Disorders committed by</i>	
<i>" the Croisiez</i>	403
<i>" Their arrival at and</i>	
<i>" taking of Jerusalem</i>	405
<i>" Cruel abuse of this success</i>	405
<i>" The fruits of this enterprise</i>	
<i>" prize</i>	406
<i>" The Pope's exhortations</i>	
<i>" censured</i>	408
<i>" The second Croisade</i>	411

" The suspicion of the " Greeks just	412
" The Pope excommuni- " cates the Croisiez, but " after their success " thinks God was for " them	413
" Mischiefs from the tak- " ing of Constantinople " by the Latins	413
" New objects of the " Croisade	415
" Croisades numerous	417
" Taxes for the Croisade, " and Saladin tenth	419
" Quarrels between the " legate and chiefs	421
" The Princes who took " the cross, and the " Pope quarrel	422
" New Lords in the " East	423
" Latin Clergy of the " East	423

" Mili-

CONTENTS.

xxv

Page

" <i>Military orders</i>	428
" <i>Ceasing of canonical</i>	
" <i>Penances</i>	432
" <i>Wickedness of the Croi-</i>	
" <i>sez</i>	435
" <i>Compulsion censured</i>	440, 449
" <i>Temporal interest the</i>	
" <i>motive in the Nor-</i>	
" <i>thern Croisade</i>	444
" <i>The last Croisade inconfi-</i>	
" <i>derable</i>	448
" <i>Religion needs not hu-</i>	
" <i>man support</i>	449
" <i>The method to convert</i>	
" <i>Mahometans</i> "	452
<i>Obstacles to the propagation of</i>	
<i>the Gospel</i>	458
<i>Why Christianity can receive</i>	
<i>no good from Popish mis-</i>	
<i>sions</i>	458
<i>Christians in general not quali-</i>	
<i>fied to make converts</i>	460
<i>Difficulties in converting Ma-</i>	
<i>hometans</i>	461

xxvi CONTENTS.

	Page
<i>It would be better to send Philosophers and Students, than Missionaries</i>	463
<i>Philip le Bel's answer to Boniface VIII.</i>	464
<i>The Greek empire attacked by Othman</i>	464
<i>Boniface VIII. establishes the Jubilee</i>	464, 481
<i>Jews banished by Philip of France</i>	467
<i>Annates, begun by Clements V.</i>	467
<i>Apostolical, a sect so called, destroyed by a Bishop</i>	469
<i>The Knights of St. John take Rhodes</i>	469
<i>Organs introduced into churches</i>	469
<i>Henry VII. the Emperor, poisoned in the Host</i>	470
<i>An Arian Princess poisoned in the same way</i>	470
<i>John XX.</i>	470
<i>Jews</i>	

CONTENTS. xxvii

Page

<i>Jews massacred by the Pastours</i>	470
<i>Marfilius writes like a Protestant in defence of the Emperor</i>	470
<i>The Council of Avignon complain of the hatred of the Laity</i>	471
<i>The proceſſion of the Sacrament introduced</i>	472
<i>Nicephorus Calliſtus</i>	472
<i>Gulielmus Occamus</i>	472
<i>Lollards</i>	472, 479
<i>Richard Bury, Biſhop of Durham, his character</i>	472
<i>Trinity Sunday eſtabliſhed</i>	476
<i>Jacobus Furnerius, Pope, by name of Benediſt XII.</i>	476
<i>Innocent VI.</i>	476
<i>Urban V.</i>	476
<i>Petrarch</i>	477
<i>Quietiſts</i>	477
<i>St. Catharine of Siena</i>	477
<i>John Blome digs in the mo- nastery</i>	

<i>nastery of Glaston for Joseph of Arimathea's body</i>	477
<i>Dancers, a sect</i>	478
<i>Antipopes</i>	479
<i>Wickliff</i>	479
<i>Fratres Albi</i>	480
<i>The Emperor Manuel's going to Rome was of service to Europe as to literature</i>	481
<i>Sawtre, the first that was burnt for Heresy in England</i>	481
<i>John Hus, and Jerom of Prague</i>	482, 485, 487
<i>At the Council of Pisa was read Gregory's decree about the procession of the Holy Ghost from the Father and the Son.</i>	483
<i>Alexander V. gives the consecrated golden rose to the Marquis of Este</i>	483
<i>Burgin burnt for Heresy</i>	484
<i>Bishop of Hildeshem, a story of him</i>	484
<i>I</i>	<i>Jews</i>

CONTENTS.

xxix

	Page
<i>Jews persecuted</i>	485
<i>The adventure of the Owl</i>	485
<i>Lithuanian and Samogite Pa-</i> <i>gans converted</i>	486
<i>The Council of Constance estab-</i> <i>lishes the superiority of Coun-</i> <i>cils over the Pope</i>	486, 489
—— <i>the communion of one</i> <i>kind</i>	487
—— <i>decrees against safe</i> <i>conducts to Heretics</i>	487
<i>The English Bishops of Con-</i> <i>stance cause a tragicomedy</i> <i>to be acted</i>	489
<i>A Priest said to be miracu-</i> <i>lously converted.</i>	489
<i>Constitution of Martin V. in</i> <i>favour of the Jews</i>	490
<i>Adamites</i>	490
<i>A pretended union between the</i> <i>Greeks and Latins</i>	491
<i>A contest, whether the doctrines</i> <i>of Plato, or Aristotle, were to</i> <i>be preferred</i>	491, 496
<i>Æneas Sylvius, afterwards</i>	

Pope

	Page	
<i>Pope Pius II.</i>	491	
<i>Taborites</i>	491	
<i>Nicolas V. Pope</i>	492	
<i>Alphonfus</i>	493	
<i>Mahomet II. takes Constanti- nople, and secures the li- brary</i>	493	
<i>Cyrillus Lucaris, the Patri- arch</i>	494	
<i>Sixtus V. the Pope, erects a bawdy-house at Rome</i>	494	
<i>John II. King of Portugal</i>	494	
<i>The Pope's power declines with the revival of letters</i>	495	
<i>The vices of Popes and Eccle- siastics</i>	498	
<i>Hatred between the Greeks and Latins</i>	498	
<i>Reflections on the Spanish and Portugueze method of pro- pagating the Gospel</i>	499	
<i>A list of persons supposed to be enemies to all religion</i>	500	
<i>The use of Philology and polite Literature</i>	501	
		<i>Remarks</i>

CONTENTS. xxxi

	Page
<i>Remarks on the Philosophers of these times</i>	502
<i>Luther's attack obliges his ad- versaries to seek out new methods of defence</i>	503
<i>Jesuits</i>	503
<i>Julius II.</i>	504
<i>Luther</i>	504



REMARKS

Just Published,

In Seven Volumes Octavo, Price £1. 15 s. bound,

S E R M O N S
O N

DIFFERENT SUBJECTS;

With the Doctrine of a Future State,
as it may be collected from the Old
Testament ;

And Four CHARGES, to the Clergy
of the Archdeaconry of London.

BY THE LATE REVEREND

J O H N J O R T I N, D. D.

Archdeacon of London, Rector of St. Dun-
stan in the East, and Vicar of Kensington.

N. B. The Fifth, Sixth and Seventh Volumes
may be had alone, to compleat those Gentlemen's
Setts who have had only the four first Volumes.



REMARKS

ON

Ecclesiastical History.

A. 902.  HE Emperor Leo married a fourth wife, which being an action prohibited by the Greek Canons, caused much disturbance. If he had only kept a whore, no noise would have been made about it ^a.

A. 905. Sergius III. was made Pope. Theodora, a woman of a vile character, ruled absolutely in Rome. She had

^a Fleury, xi. 637.

2 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

two daughters, Marozia and Theodora, more profligate even than herself. Marozia had by Pope Sergius a bastard called John, who afterwards was Pope. Sergius, says Fleury,^b is the first Pope whom I find charged with this crime.

He should have added that he was not the last Pope famous for getting bastards.

A. 912. The Normans, after having ravaged France for seventy years, fixed themselves there, and embraced Christianity. The Province called Normandy was settled upon their Prince Rollo: and then the Archbishop of Rheims consulted his Holiness Pope John, concerning the manner of conducting and disciplining these new Christians.

A. 915. This John X. was made Pope by his whore Theodora, who had great power in Rome^c.

A. 928. Trypho, a Monk who was in odour of Sanctity, held the See of

^b xi. 641.

^c Ibid. 662.

Constantinople: yet, contrary to all rules, he suffered himself to be appointed only for a time, till Theophylact the Emperor's son should be of age to receive the Patriarchal dignity, which was designed for him. This is the first remarkable instance of the abuse which is since called *Confidence*, or holding spiritual preferments in trust for another^d.

A. 931. Mary, or Marozia, who governed Rome, caused her bastard John, whom she had by Pope Sergius III. to be elected Pope, when he was only twenty five years of age. This was John XI.^e

A. 956. Paul the Monk, after his death having cured a Dæmoniac, who was brought to his tomb, Symeon his disciple, vexed at the tumult which this miracle had caused in the Chapel, approached to his tomb, and said to

^d Fleury, xii. 17.

^e Ibid. 10.

4 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

him; Is this your aversion from worldly glory? Is this your love of silence and solitude? You are going to involve us in a thousand troubles. Our Monastery will be filled with men, women, and children; and what repose shall we have? If you intend thus to disturb us with your miracles, tell us so, and we will remove to another place, and then you may work as many as you think fit. After this remonstrance, the Saint cured no more persons in a public manner, though he continued to relieve those who invoked his aid privately, as he had done in his life-time ^f.

Saint Bruno, Archbishop of Cologne, was a Prelate of extraordinary merit, and uncommon learning, for those days ^z.

Pope John XII. elected at the age of eighteen, was a Monster of iniquity. He was accused and convicted, in a Council, of simony, perjury, fornication,

^f Fleury, xii. 107.

^z Ibid. 81.

tion, adultery, sacrilege, murder, incest, blasphemy, atheism, &c. and deposed for these exploits. But he recovered his See, and deposed the Pope who had been appointed in his room. His name was Octavianus, but he took that of John XII. and was the first Pope who introduced the custom of assuming a new name. His end was suitable to his behaviour; for being one night in bed with another man's wife, he received a blow from an unknown hand, of which he died after eight days, without any other *viaticum* than the knock on the temples which did his business. Baronius says, from Luitprandus, that it was the Devil who gave John that blow; but it seems not probable that Satan would have used his good friend in such a manner. It is more likely that it might be the husband of the adulteress.

About the time that John entered into his See, died Theophilus, who at the age of sixteen had been made Patriarch of Constantinople, and was

6 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

much such another Saint as John. He openly sold Bishopricks and all Ecclesiastical offices. He loved hunting and horses even to madness; he kept two thousand, and fed them with all such sort of rarities as they would eat. On an Holy Thursday, as he was at Mass, word was brought to him at Church that his favourite mare had foaled. He instantly left the Church-service in the midst, to pay her a visit, and then came back to make an end of the service. He introduced the custom of dancing in the Church on holydays, with immodest postures, accompanied with ridiculous ballads ^h.

A. 962. The Emperor Otho granted many favours to the Pope; but he reserved to himself and to his successors the sovereignty and supreme jurisdiction in Rome ⁱ.

A. 969. In the Ecclesiastical Laws of king Edgar, there are very rigid pe-

^h Fleury, xii. 98. 125. 138.

ⁱ Ibid. 119.

nances

nances for offenders. But to soften them, was introduced the commutation and redemption of bodily penances. Thus a person of great power and wealth might be assisted by others, and chuse out as many persons to fast along with him and for him, as should accomplish in three days the fasts enjoined him for seven years. But then much money was also to be given to the poor, or to pious uses.

As to sinners of low degree, they were to bear their punishment in their own body, according to the Rule, *Qui non solvit ex crumena, luat in cute*^k.

A. 973. Mayeul, Abbot of Clugni, was greatly solicited by the Emperor to accept of the Popedom: but he constantly refused it. I know, said he, that I have not the qualifications requisite for that dignity; and the Romans and I are as far remote from each other in manners, as we are in place.

^k Fleury, xii. 254.

8 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

This resolution of mind, says Fleury¹, is perhaps not the least of the miracles which he is reported to have performed.

A. 980. About this time lived Suidas, the Grammarian, a Compiler who did not abound in judgment. However, his Lexicon is very useful, and the Learned know its value.

“ They only, says Le Clerc^m, who are conversant with Greek Authors, and skilled in the language, are capable of making proper use of Hesychius, Suidas, Phavorinus, Julius Pollux, and such sort of Dictionaries. I could name an eminent Divine, who made use of them to little purpose, because he had not that sort of learning which was necessary.”

The Divine whom Le Clerc had in view, was, as I conjecture, our Hammond.

¹ xii. 191.

² Bibl. Chois. x. 294.

A. 989. Christianity was established amongst the Russians or Muscovites, who have always preserved the Greek Rites in their religious ceremonies ^a.

A. 990. Ælfric, a learned English Ecclesiastic, recommended to all Christians the reading of the Scriptures in the vulgar tongue, and condemned the doctrine of Transubstantiation, which was then creeping into the Church ^o.

A. 991. Arnoul, Bishop of Orleans, in a Council, made a very warm and spirited and judicious oration against the Popes of those days, representing them as most execrable Monsters. Fleury ^p did well, to give us this free speech; but he adds, with prudent caution, that this honest Prelate was rather unguarded in his expressions, and seemed to bring the holy See into contempt.

^a Fleury, xii. 254.

^o Cave, ii. 108.

^p xii. 268.

A. 993.

A. 993. Pope John XV. at the head of a Council, placed Uldaric amongst the Saints. This is the first authentic Act of a *Canonization* in form, though the word itself was not yet used^a.

This same John was a vile wretch, who sold every thing, to make money of it; a true successor of Simon Magus. He condemned a whole Council of Bishops, because they had deposed a wicked Prelate, and elected another, without asking his leave: but Archbishop Gerbert set his Decree at defiance, and reasoned very well against the exorbitant authority claimed in those days by the Bishops of Rome^r.

A. 996 Gregory V. nephew to king Otho, was made Pope, aged only twenty four, and the first German who was raised to the See of Rome. A year afterwards, an Antipope was made, called John XVI. who had his tongue and his

^a Fleury, xii. 283. Mosheim, p. 374.

^r Fleury, xii. 283. 314.

nose cut off, and his eyes put out, and then was flung into prison^s.

Alfric, Archbishop of Canterbury, composed a Grammar and a Dictionary, and translated some books of Scripture into the Saxon or English tongue^t.

A. 998. The Festival of All Souls was established, and the worship of the Virgin Mary was carried to an high degree of folly and superstition, which yet hath been increasing from that time to these later ages^u.

Robert, king of France, married Bertha, his cousin german; for which he was excommunicated, and remained so for two or three years. No one would converse with him, except two servants, who waited upon him; and even they flung into the fire the remains of his victuals, and all the vessels out

^s Fleury, xii. 314. 320.

^t Ibid. 394.

^u Mosheim, p. 377.

12 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

of which he ate or drank. So says Petrus Damianus, who adds that from this marriage there sprang forth a Monster, with the head and neck of a goose. But Damianus was the truer *Goose*^x.

Towards the latter end of this Century, Pope Silvester II. endeavoured to excite the Christians to recover the holy Land, and made the first attempt of a Croisade.

At the same time the foundations of the Turkish Empire began to be laid, and the Turks prevailed over the Saracens.

In this age, though dark and ignorant, a subtle question was started, relating to Dialectics, concerning *Universals*^y, as they were called, or the *genera* and *species rerum*, whether they were *realities* and *substances*, or mere *names*. Thence arose the Sects of the *Realists* and

^x Fleury, xii. 333.

^y As, for example, *Man*, *Horse*, *Dog*, &c. signifying not *this* or *that*, in particular, but *all* in general.

the *Nominalists*. This controversy was warmly agitated for many ages, and caused furious contentions amongst Divines and Philosophers.

Pope Silvester II. was a learned man and skilled in the Mathematics for those times, and compared with his contemporaries; for which he passed, in the opinion of the Monks, for a conjuror and a Magician. What he knew of these things, he had learned from the Arabs, or Saracens, particularly those of Spain, to whom was entirely owing the knowledge of Physic, Philosophy, Astronomy, and Mathematics in that age, and in the age that ensued.

The Prelates and the Clergy were in general as ignorant and as profligate as can well be conceived; and the Popes were not men, but Devils. The reigning vices of the Clergy were fornication and simony. The Paulicians or Manichæans increased. Some Arians
still

14 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

still remained in Italy; and some Anthropomorphites^z.

These were times in which, as somebody hath observed, *Kyrieelleison* and *Paralipomenon* were accounted two eminent Saints of the Church; and he who could read Greek, passed for a Sorcerer.

Notwithstanding this general depravity, some sober and serious Christians were remarkable for acts of charity, or almsgiving; and though these donations might be often not judiciously applied, they seem to have been honestly designed.

“ From the writers of this age it manifestly appears that the essential doctrines of Christianity were either grossly misrepresented, or quite obscured with a mixture of false and foolish opinions. Both the Greek and the Latin were agreed in this, that the very soul and spirit of religion con-

^z Mosheim, p. 359, 360. 393. 455. 464. 472. 478.

fisted in worshipping Images, in honouring dead Saints, in collecting and preserving Reliques, and in enriching Monks and Priests. No one dared to address himself to God without having observed these preliminaries. As to the zeal shewed in searching after Reliques, it was carried to perfect frenzy; and if you will trust to the veracity of Monks, the Divine Providence was principally employed in revealing to dreaming old women and to baldpate Friars the graves where the bones of holy Persons lay repositied. They were all miserably afraid of the fire of Purgatory, and dreaded it more than the torments of Hell; for these they thought might easily be escaped, if they departed this life enriched with the prayers and merits of the Monks and the Clergy. The Priests, discerning the great profits which arose to them from these terrors, contrived to augment them daily by their discourses upon the subject, by fables, and by false miracles.

The

The controversies which had been warmly carried on in the preceding century concerning Divine Grace and the Eucharist, were now fallen asleep. For, as it might be proved by many testimonies, each party left the other at liberty either to retain their opinion or to relinquish it. Nor were they curious in this unlearned age to inquire into the sentiments of learned Doctors in these and other points. It would therefore be easy to produce from amongst those who at this time were persons of some note, followers of Augustin, and followers of Pelagius; and also some who thought that the true natural body and blood of Christ was exhibited in the Lord's Supper; and others who judged it to be a doubtful matter, or who were of opinion that Christ was only received after a spiritual manner. Yet it must not be imagined that this mutual moderation and forbearance should be ascribed to the prudence and virtue of those times.

It

It was mere ignorance and incapacity of reasoning, which kept the peace, and deterred them from entering into debates to which they were unequal.

It might be shewed by innumerable testimonies and examples, that superstition reigned triumphant through the whole Christian world, accompanied with a multitude of frivolous and senseless notions, which the Priests industriously cherished for the sake of lucre. But of all these opinions adopted by the Latins, to the disgrace and disturbance of the times, none produced worse effects than a persuasion that the last Day was at hand. This doctrine had been broached in the preceding century, grounded upon the *Revelation of St. John*^a; and now was generally taught and received in Europe, and produced an excessive terror in the minds of the people. For the Apostle, as it was taken for granted, had clearly foretold that after the tenth Decad of

^a xx. 3, 4.

years from the birth of Christ ten times repeated, Satan would be let loose, Antichrist would come, and the destruction of the earth would ensue. Hence it came to pass that an innumerable multitude, leaving their possessions, and giving them to Churches or Monasteries, repaired to Palæstine, where they thought that Christ would descend from heaven to judge the world. Others solemnly devoted themselves and all their goods to Churches, to Monasteries, and to the Clergy, and entered into their service as bondslaves, performing a daily task. Their hope was that the Supreme Judge would be favourable to them, if he found them thus occupied in the service of his servants. Hence, when there was an eclipse of the sun, or moon, they fled to rocks and caverns, to hide themselves. Hence others consecrated a great part at least of their effects to God, and to his Saints, that is, to Priests and Friars. Hence in many places they suffered both their own houses and the sacred edifices to go to ruin,

ruin, or even pulled them down themselves, concluding that they would soon be of no use. Some wise men there were, who opposed this vulgar error; but it could not be suppressed before the end of the century^b.

A Saxon Homily, written in this century, in the reign of Ethelred II. shews to a demonstration that the English Church at that time opposed the doctrine of Transubstantiation. See it in Rapin^c.

A. 1000. One Leutard, a poor ignorant man, in the Diocese of Chaalons in France, set up for a prophet, and seduced many persons. He had been labouring in the field; and falling asleep, he imagined that a swarm of bees entered into him at the back door, and came out at his mouth, with a great buzzing, that they stung him, and tormented him a long time, and then be-

^c Mosheim, p. 372. Bibl. Univ. ix. 12.

^b i. 143.

gan to speak to him, and commanded him to do strange and impossible things. Plagued with this vision, he returned home, and quitted his wife, pretending that the Gospel required him so to do. He went then into a Church to pray, and seizing on a Crucifix he brake it to pieces. The bystanders were frightened, and supposed him to be out of his senses; but as they were simple and credulous peasants, he persuaded them that he acted by inspiration. He told them that only a part of the Scriptures was to be received, and the rest to be rejected as useless, and that they were under no obligation to pay their tithes. The Bishop of the Diocese had a conference with him, and confuted all his frivolous pretensions, and convinced his followers that they had been seduced by him; upon which the poor wretch, finding himself confounded and deserted, went and flung himself into a well.

About the same time another Fana-
tic started up at Ravenna, who was by
profession

profession a Grammarian. One night he dreamed that the three Poets, Virgil, Homer, and Juvenal appeared to him, thanking him for the pains which he took to illustrate their writings, and promising him a share of their glory. Puffed up with this vision, he began to dogmatize, and to teach things contrary to the Christian faith, and to maintain that all things contained in the Poets were to be believed. He was condemned as an heretic by the Archbishop; and many being found up and down in Italy infected with the same error, they were extirpated by fire and sword. At the same time many heretics came forth from Sardinia, and corrupted several Christians in Spain, and were also destroyed by the Catholics. This inundation of errors was supposed to be the accomplishment of St. John's prophecy in the Revelation, that after a thousand years Satan should be let loose^d.

^d Fleury, xii. 372.

A. 1009. Peter was made Pope, and took the name of Sergius IV. He is the first Pope, by birth a Roman, who changed his name^e.

A. 1010. The Prince of Babylon had destroyed the Church of the holy Sepulchre at Jerusalem; and it was a confirmed opinion in France that it was done by the instigation of the Jews. Glauber, the Monk, relates it thus; The Jews were filled with indignation to see the innumerable multitude of Christian Pilgrims, who repaired to the holy Sepulchre. The Jews at Orleans, who were numerous and bold, gained over by bribes a runaway servant from a Monastery, who travelled about in the guise of a pilgrim, and gave him a letter to the Prince of Babylon, admonishing him that if he did not speedily destroy that place so venerable in the sight of the Christians, they would come and take away his dominions.

^e Fleury, xii. 385.

The Prince took the alarm, and sent men to Jerusalem, who totally demolished the Church, and endeavoured with iron bars to break the Grotto of the Sepulchre, but could not. This was the second time that the Church was destroyed: it had been burnt by the Persians in the year 613.

It was soon generally known that this disaster was owing to the malice of the Jews: and the Christians with one consent resolved to expell them. They became objects of public hatred, they were driven out of the cities, many were drowned, and put to death various ways, and some killed themselves; so that few of them appeared in Christendom. The Bishops forbad all Christians to hold any communication with them, except they were converted. Many therefore of the Jews received baptism, through fear of death, and afterwards relapsed to their old customs.

24 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

The false pilgrim returning to Orleans was discovered by another pilgrim, and being seized and tortured, confessed his crime, and was burnt.— Not long after this, King Henry drove the Jews from Mentz. The Greeks relate the thing in a different manner, &c. ^f.

One head of John the Baptist (for there are many, and John was at last *ἐκατοντακεφάλαιος*) was found at the Monastery of St. John of Angeli in Saintonge ^g.

A. 1022. Bouchard, Bishop of Worms, was accounted one of the most learned Prelates in his time, and of a sober and exemplary life and conversation. When he died, the Inventory of his worldly goods and chattels consisted of an hair-shirt, an iron chain which served him for a belt, and in money three deniers.

^f Fleury, xii. 386.

^g Ibid. 441.

Times are altered, and with them the Inventories of Bishops.

Some, both Ecclesiastics and Laymen, being discovered to be Manichæans, were burnt at Orleans, and others at Toulouse ^b.

A. 1024. John XIX. a Layman, was made Pope by dint of money.

A. 1025. Some Monks had pleaded an exemption from Episcopal jurisdiction, by virtue of a privilege granted by the Pope. But the Council of Anse rejected their plea; which shews that the Prelates of those days did not think Popes to be above the ancient Canons and Constitutions of the Church ⁱ.

Simony at this time was universally practised, particularly in Italy. St. Romualdus exerted himself, and preached against it with vehemence. But says Damianus, the Writer of his Life, (who was

^b Fleury, xii. 426. 433.

ⁱ Ibid. 464.

a Bishop)

26 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

a Bishop) “ I much question whether he ever reformed one man : for this poisonous heresy is the most stubborn and difficult of all to be cured, especially amongst the Clergy of higher rank. They promise amendment, and they defer it from day to day ; so that it is easier even to convert a Jew than a Bishop^k. ”

A. 1027. The famous Musician Guido of Arezzo, a Monk, invented the *Gamut*, and the six Notes, UT, RE, MI, FA, SOL, LA, by the help of which a young person could learn to chant in a few months, better than many men had been able to do in as many years. These syllables he took from the three first lines of the Hymn to St. John,

UT *queant laxis*, &c.^l

A. 1030. It was now a custom to baptize Church-bells, and also to add oil and chrism^m.

^k Fleury, xii. 466. xiii. 51.

^l Ibid. xii. 473.

^m Ibid. 491.

“ They

“ They were well meaning and honest, but ignorant and illiterate men, whom Gerhard, Bishop of Cambray and Arras, converted and brought over to the Church, at a Synod held in the year 1030. They had received their tenets from some Italians, and believed, as they themselves acknowledged, that the whole of religion consisted in a pious disposition, and a behaviour suitable to the divine precepts, and that all external worship was to be slighted. In particular ;

1. They rejected baptism, especially of infants, as a rite of no utility towards salvation.

2. For the same reason, they rejected the Lord's Supper.

3. They held that temples were not more sacred than private houses.

4. They said that Altars were only an heap of stones, and worthy of no honour.

3

5. They

28 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

5. They condemned the use of incense, and of consecrated oil, in religious rites.

6. They also rejected the use of Bells.

7. They denied the divine institution of Bishops, Presbyters, and Deacons, as Ministers of the Church, and said that the order of Doctors was unnecessary in a Christian Congregation.

8. They said that funeral rites were invented to gratify the avarice of the Priests, and that it mattered not whether a man were buried in holy ground, or any where else.

9. They affirmed that Penitence, as it was then understood, namely, voluntary sufferings undergone to expiate past offences, was of no utility.

10. They denied that the sins of those who suffered in Purgatory might be remitted by means of Masses, alms, and vicarious penances; and doubtless they rejected also the doctrine of a Purgatory.

11. They

11. They condemned marriage, as pernicious and unlawfulⁿ.

12. They allowed some worship or honour to be paid to the Apostles and Martyrs, but would not grant the same to Confessors, meaning thereby all those who were called Saints, but had not suffered death for the sake of Christ. They said that their bones were not more sacred than those of other people.

13. They held that Chanting of Psalms or Hymns in Churches and religious assemblies was superstitious and unlawful.

14. They said that the Cross was not more holy than another piece of wood, and that no reverence was to be paid to it.

15. They affirmed that the Images of Christ and of the Saints ought to be

ⁿ I think it very improbable that this should have been one of their doctrines.

removed out of the Churches, and by no means to be adored.

16. Lastly, They condemned a diversity of degrees and of authority amongst the Ministers of the Gospel.

Whosoever considers the corrupted condition of religion in these times, will not think it strange that multitudes of persons all over Europe, who had a sense of piety and morality, should have gone into these and into such like opinions °."

But rather for want of knowledge than of honesty, whilst they rejected many abominable corruptions, they also ran into some opposite extremes.

Dum vitant vitia, in contraria currunt.

Robert, King of France, informed Gualin, Archbishop of Bourges, that in some parts of his kingdom it had rained blood, which was of such a nature, that if it fell upon flesh, clothes, or stones, it could not be washed off;

• Mosheim, p. 438.

but if it fell upon wood, the stain was easily got out. He asks him if there was any instance to be found of such a rain. The Prelate answered him that this prodigy portended a civil war, and he relates diverse examples of the same kind taken from History; to which he adds some mystical reasons^p.

A. 1033. To John XIX. succeeded Theophylact his nephew, aged only twelve years, and chosen by bribery. He was called Benedict IX. and occupied the See eleven years and some months, dishonouring his station by his most infamous life. Thus Simony reigned triumphant at Rome, for the space of twenty five years.

He made himself daily more and more odious by his wicked behaviour, and by the rapines and murders which he committed. The Romans, no longer able to suffer them, expelled him from Rome, and from the Pontificate^q,

^p Du Pin, T. viii. P. ii. p. 6.

^q A. 1044.

and

32 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

and chose Silvester III. in his room, But neither did Silvester acquire the Popedom *gratis*, nor did he hold it more than three months; for Benedict, who was of the family of the Counts of Tusculum, by the assistance of his relations so harrassed Rome, that he recovered his station. But as he continued his scandalous course of life, and found himself despised and detested both by Clergy and Laity, he agreed to retire, and to abandon himself more freely to his pleasures. Stipulating therefore to receive a sum of money, he resigned his place to Gratianus, called Gregory VI. and went to live in his own territories^r.

The holy Abbot Poppo waited upon the Emperor Saint Henry, to procure some favours for his Monastery. He gained the good graces of this Prince: he also persuaded him to renounce a diversion in which he used to take pleasure. It was to expose to the bears a

^r Fleury, xii. 515, &c.

naked

naked man smeared all over with honey. He so effectually convinced the Emperor and his Nobles of the barbarity of this shew, that he caused it to be abolished^s.

A. 1039. Casimire, son of a king of Poland, being a Monk, who had made his vows, and was in Deacon's Orders, obtained from the Pope a dispensation to accept the crown of Poland, and to take a wife. But the Pontif wisely stipulated a certain annual rent to be paid to his holiness^t.

— — — — *Rem facias; rem
Si possis, recte; si non, quocumque modo rem.*

A. 1041. The Abbot Richard went on a pilgrimage to Jerusalem, and being there on Saturday, in the holy week, he assisted at the ceremony of the *new fire*, which in those days was thought to descend miraculously into the holy Sepulchre^u.

^s Fleury, xii. 517.

^t Ibid. 519.

^u Ibid. 533.

34 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

Maundrel, if I remember right, and other modern travellers have described this ridiculous ceremony.

A. 1044. Gregory VI. carried his martial rage so far, under pretence of defending the Church, that he acquired the name of the *Bloody*; and even his Cardinals admonished him, when he was dying, not to cause himself to be buried in St. Peter's Church, with his predecessors^x.

About this time was instituted the Festival of All Souls, or Prayers and Commemorations for the benefit of the Dead^y.

A. 1051. Some Manichæans were discovered, and put to death^z.

A. 1053. Leo IX. disputing in a letter with the Patriarch of Constantinople, says;

^x L'Enfant, *Conc. de P.* ii. 50.

^y Fleury, xii. 561.

^z Ibid. 600.

“ You take Eunuchs, and ordain them Bishops, which hath given occasion to a common report; that a woman hath sat in the See of Constantinople: but this is a crime so abominable, that we cannot give credit to it.”

This reproach, says Fleury, makes it probable that the fable of Pope Joan was not yet invented: for she is placed between Leo IV. and Benedict III. about two hundred years before Leo IX.

Humbert, in an answer to the objections of the Greeks, cites the twelfth and thirteenth chapter of Exodus, and the twenty third of Leviticus; which shews that the present division of chapters was then established ^a.

A. 1059. Nicolas II. endeavoured to restrain the privilege of electing Popes to a certain number of Cardinals; which was accomplished in the next Century by Alexander III ^b.

^a Fleury, xiii. 10.

^b Mosheim, p. 398.

A. 1062. Petrus Damianus wrote the life of his friend *Dominicus*, called *Loricatus*, whose austerities and flagellations were childish, superstitious, astonishing and shocking. But such was the piety of those times. I find, says * Fleury, no examples of these voluntary and severe flagellations before this eleventh century, when they began to grow common. But it is not in the writings of Damianus that we must seek for judgment and reasoning.

A. 1067. We have a strange story of a trial by fire, through which one Peter a Monk passed unhurt, to prove that the Bishop of his Diocese was guilty of Simony^d.

A. 1068. Alexander II. wrote a letter to all the Bishops of Gaul, in which he says ;

We have heard with pleasure that you have protected the Jews who dwell

* xiii. 102. 215.

^d Ibid. 187.

amongst

amongst you, that they might not be slain by those who went to fight the Saracens in Spain. Thus St. Gregory declared formerly that it was an impiety to attempt to exterminate them; since God by his merciful providence hath preserved them to live dispersed over the earth, after having lost their country and their liberty, for the punishment of the crime of their forefathers. Their case is very different from that of the Saracens, against whom war is just, because they persecute the Christians, and drive them from their habitations and their cities; whilst the Jews every where submit to servitude^e.

A. 1071. The Abbot Desiderius undertaking to build a magnificent Monastery at Monte Cassino, sent persons to Constantinople, who procured architects, and workmen in marble and mosaic; for these arts had been lost in Italy above five hundred years^f.

^e Fleury, xiii. 190.

^f Ibid. 207.

38 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

A. 1072. Adam of Breme, an Historian of great sincerity, wrote the Antiquities and the History of Denmark, Sweden, Norway, and the neighbouring Islands^s.

A. 1073. The execrable tyrant Hildebrand was made Pope, and called Gregory VII. This was the first man who subverted all the ancient privileges of Kings and Princes, of Councils and Bishops, of Clergy and Laity, and established the dominion of the Pope, as King of Kings, and Lord of Lords.

He made severe laws against Simony, and against the Concubinage or Matrimony which almost universally prevailed amongst Ecclesiastics. He and his successors would not allow the Clergy to keep either wives or concubines. It was expected of them that they should content themselves *venere vulgivaga*, with fornication, adultery, &c. But a violent opposition was made to these

^s Fleury, xiii. 227.

wicked decrees, especially by the sober and sensible part of the Clergy, who were married men.

“Hildebrand was a man of an high spirit, equal to the greatest undertakings, intrepid, quick of understanding and judgment; but beyond measure proud, stubborn, intractable, vehement, and void of all piety and religion, the most haughty and audacious of all the Popes. The Roman Church worships him amongst the Patrons and Intercessors in the Court of Heaven, although he hath not been canonized in due form. Paul V. in the beginning of the seventeenth century, dedicated an holy-day to him on the twenty-fifth of May. But the European Princes, particularly the Emperor and the King of France, will not permit him to be enlisted amongst the Saints of the Calendar, and publicly worshiped in their dominions; and in our days there have been contests about it with Benedict XIII^b.”

^b Mosheim, p. 400—412.

This Wretch, who persecuted the married Clergy without mercy, who deposed the Emperor and gave his kingdom to another, who made him stand barefoot and fasting in frost and snow, and covered with a piece of woollen, for three days, before he would admit him to his presence, defended his conduct by various arguments, the folly, futility and impudence of which Fleury hath fairly enough exposed.

Otho, a Bishop who lived in the next century, and was too much attached to the Popes and to their authority, yet owns in his History of those times that the whole Empire was scandalized at this innovation. I examine again and again, says he, the History of the Roman Emperors, and I cannot find that any one of them was ever excommunicated and deprived of his kingdom by a Pope.

In truth this Pontif had all the marks of Antichrist upon him, and his religion was nothing more than grimace.

He

He wrote a very complaisant letter to a Mahometan Prince, in which he says to him ; You and we adore one and the same God, though in a different manner. I wish you everlasting happiness in Abraham's bosom. Good!

Great was the intimacy and friendship between Gregory and the Countess Matilda. This foolish Princess gave her dominions to the Pope, and to the See of Rome, which were no less than all Tuscany, and a great part of Lombardy, reserving to herself only the use and profits of them during her life. The enemies of Gregory, of whom he had plenty, accused him of a criminal correspondence with this Lady. Lambertus the Historian says that it was a mere calumny, and gives this admirable proof, that Gregory wrought many miracles, and therefore could not be a Fornicator.

He would not suffer the Bohemians to celebrate the divine service in their own language, which was the Slavonian.

42 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

nian. Fleury condemns this decision of the Pope.

He died in the year 1085, and many miracles were wrought at his tomb. Pope Anastasius IV. had him painted in a Church of Rome, amongst other Saints, about 60 years after his death. In the year 1584 his name was inserted in the Roman Martyrology, corrected by order of Gregory XIII. And Paul V. by a Brief in the year 1609, permitted the Archbishop and the Chapter of Salernum to honour him as a Saint in a Public Serviceⁱ.

At this time Heretics in general were called *Patarini*; and violent quarrels arose about *Investitures*, or the right of Patronage in the Laity, which Gregory VII. was resolved to take from them; and this caused the war between the Pope and the Emperor Henry IV. and

ⁱ Cave, ii. 151. Fleury, xiii. 251. 334. 383. xiv. 48. Du Pin, viii. 31. Bibl. Univ. ix. 20. Bibl. A. & M. viii. where le Clerc hath given us his Life. Bayle, *Gregoire*. vii. Barbeyrac, *Mor. des Peres*, p. 118.

subsequent contests between the Church and the State.

“ If I am not mistaken, the terrible contentions between the Emperors and the Popes about the inauguration of Bishops and Abbots would not have been carried on with such bitterness, or have continued for so long a time, if men of a liberal education and a generous mind had presided over the Church. But for the space of fifty years the Church was governed by a succession of five Monks, men of an obscure and mean birth, of brutish manners, and incapable of compliance, infected with the true spirit of Monkery, that is, with an inflexible obstinacy. As soon as ever persons of an ingenuous and enlarged mind ascended St. Peter's throne, a different face of things appeared, and a fair prospect of peace^k. ”

A. 1076. Anselm, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, drew up a De-

^k Mosheim, p. 458.

monstration

44 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

monstration of the being of God in the Metaphysical way. His zeal for the See of Rome procured him the title of Saint¹.

A. 1077. Lambertus, a German Monk, was the best writer at that time in the Christian world. He was author of a General History, of which Joseph Scaliger says;

Equidem miror in sæculo tam barbaro tantam hominis et in loquendo puritatem, et in temporum putatione solertiam fuisse, ut Chronologis nostri temporis pudorem aliquem exprimere possit, si aliquem sensum harum rerum haberent.

Barthius also calls him a Writer,

Quo scriptor nemo politius, inter Veteres, res Germaniæ literis commisit^m.

A. 1079. Hugo, Duke of Burgundy, an excellent Ruler, embraced the Monastic state. Gregory VII. was much

¹ Fleury, xiii. 361. Rapin, i. 219.

^m See Cave, ii. 153.

displeased

displeased at it; and in a Letter to the Abbot who had admitted him he says; You have received a Duke into your Monastery, and you have deprived an hundred thousand Christians of a Protector, and exposed them to all kind of evils. We have plenty of good Monks, and of good private persons; but a great scarcity of good Princes.

The Pope's judgment in this point was just and right, and ought to be celebrated, as it is the only good thing that can be said of himⁿ.

A. 1081. ° Alexius Comnenus was made Emperor of Constantinople. His ingenious daughter Anna Comnena hath written his Life, or his Panegyric. He is grievously accused by the Latins of having betrayed and used them very ill in their Expedition to the Holy Land. But in truth he had just reason to fear and to abhor such assistants and visitors, who had God in their mouth, and the

▪ See Fleury, xiii. 383.

• See Cousin, *Hist. de Const.* Avertissement, T. iv.

Devil in their heart, who were perfect Ruffians, and the scum and filth of the Western world, and in point of morals and religion not one jot better than the Infidels, and who afterwards, instead of fighting the Mahometans, took Constantinople, and set up a Latin Emperor.

^p Anna Comnena mentions an artificial fire, or the *Ignis Græcus*, which burned with great violence, and was used in war. It was made, says she, of the gum of pines and of other trees that are ever-green, mixed with sulphur, and reduced to a powder.

In the days of Alexius, there were heretics called *Bogomili*, and supposed to be a sort of Manichæans. Their leader, called Basilius, was condemned to be burnt, and had declared that the fire would not hurt him. The Greeks who carried him to execution, first took off his cloak, and flung it into the fire, to try whether it would prove incom-

bustible. Whilst it was burning, the poor Fanatic cried out, Do you not see that my cloak is untouched, and carried away in the air? Upon which they cast him also into the fire, where he was soon consumed to ashes^a.

Bogomili fuerunt Ariani.—Eorum præcipuus hyperaspites Basilius combustus dicitur ab Alexio Comneno Imperatore, postquam quinquaginta duobus annis prædicasset non esse Trinitatem, et Christum fuisse Archangelum Michaellem. — Alias etiam dicti Bulgari, seu Bulgares, vel more Gallico corrupte, Bugares; et hodie Galli jocosè utuntur appellatione Bougre, eo sensu quo Helvetii Raetser seu Gazari abutuntur—Porro sicut Bulgari nomen cessit in abusum, ita et Boni Hominis appellatio (Ariani enim in Gallia se Bonos Homines vocabant) hodie in Gallia et Teutonia denotat Cornutum, fortassis propter patientiam horum temporum Hæreticorum^r.

^a Cousin, xv. 9. Fleury, xiv. 144.

^r Sandius, Hist. Eccl. p. 386.

48 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

A. 1084. The Carthusian Order, one of the most rigid Monastic Institutions, was founded by St. Bruno, a Fanatic. It hath least of any degenerated from its primitive rigour, and it hath made its way in the world much slower than other Orders. There are only a few Carthusian Nunneries, and in those few there is a relaxation of some severities, particularly of a perpetual silence, which doubtless was too heavy an imposition upon the Fair Sex^t.

A. 1089. "A dispute of a subtle nature was stirred up in France by Roscelinus, Canon of Compiègne, a considerable Logician of those times, and the Head of the Sect of the *Nominalists*. He denied that it was possible to conceive how the Son of God could take upon him the human nature, separately from the Father and the Holy Ghost, unless the three Divine Persons were three THINGS, or natures separately existing, like three Angels, or

^t Mosheim, p. 408. Fleury, xiii. 515. xiv. 38.

three Souls; although these three Divine Existences had one power and one will. Being admonished that by affirming this, he made three Gods, he frankly replied, that if the expression might be permitted, it would be true to affirm that there were three Gods. He was compelled to retract this position, in a " French Council. But the danger being blown over, he resumed it again: for which he was banished. Taking refuge in England, he again caused new commotions, for he vehemently contended that the sons of priests, who were born out of lawful wedlock, ought by no means to be admitted into holy Orders; which in those days was a most odious doctrine. So being expelled from England, he returned to France, and living at Paris renewed the old quarrel.—

If I am not mistaken, this whole controversy took its rise from the violent contentions between the *Realists* and the *Nominalists*. The former seem to have

deduced this consequence from the doctrines of the latter, amongst whom Roscelinus was eminent. If, said they, according to you, *Universal Substances* are mere NAMES, and the Dialectic Art hath for its object WORDS alone, it will follow that the Three *Persons* also in the Deity are in your opinion, not THINGS, but NAMES. Not so, said Roscelinus; the Father, the Son, and the Spirit are not mere *names*, but belong to the class of *Things*, or *Beings*, or *Realities*. But our Logician by avoiding Scylla fell into Charybdis; for his adversaries from his concessions concluded that he had adopted *Tritheism*^{*}.

Difficult indeed it was both for Roscelinus and for his Antagonists to steer between *Tritheism* and *Sabellianism*.

“ The Popes would not suffer those of their community to use any tongue but the Latin in their public service.

^{*} Mosheim, p, 439. Fleury, xiii. 552. Cave, ii. 178.

Whilst

Whilst the Latin language prevailed amongst all the nations of the West, or was unknown only to a few, there was no considerable reason why it should not have been kept up in the religious assemblies of Christians. But when the language together with the dominion of the Romans, declined by degrees, and at last was quite lost, it was just and fit that every nation should make use of its own in celebrating divine service. Yet this favour could not be obtained from the Popes in this and the following ages, and the Latin Ritual was obtruded upon the common people, who understood it not. Various causes for this perverse behaviour have been assigned by various persons, and some of their conjectures seem to be too refined and farfetched. The principal reason was undoubtedly a superstitious respect for Antiquity. From the same motive the Eastern Christians fell into the same fault, of whom the Ægyptians in their religious service retain the old Coptic, the Jacobites and Nestorians, the Sy-

E 2 riac,

riac, and the Abyssines the Æthiopic language, although they be quite obsolete and unintelligible to the Vulgar^y.

“The Manichæans or Paulicians, who dwelt in Bulgaria and Thrace, were persecuted by the Greeks. They spread themselves in Italy, and in other parts of Europe; and then the Popes waged war with them. They were called *Paterini*, *Cathari*, *Albigenses*, *Bulgari*, *Boni Homines*, &c. Some of them were burnt for their heresy; but many of them seem to have adopted very little of the Manichæan system.

The Manichæans of Orleans were Mystics, who despised the external worship of God, allowed no efficacy to rites and ceremonies, or even to the Sacraments, accounted true religion to consist in contemplation, or in elevating the mind to God and to divine things, and philosophized concerning the Deity and the three Persons in God with too

^y Mosheim, p. 434.

much

much refinement, and with more subtilty than that age would admit. These Refiners, who arose in Italy, in subsequent times were diffused through Europe, and in Germany, were called *Fra-
tres liberi spiritus*, *Free-thinkers*, and in other provinces *Beghardi*^z."

A custom was introduced for the Priests in the Latin Church to pronounce the words of consecration in the Eucharist in so low a voice, that none of the Congregation should hear them. The Council of Trent hath anathematized all those who presume to condemn this stupid and ridiculous practice:

Si quis dixerit Ecclesiæ Romanæ ritum, quo submissa voce verba consecrationis proferuntur, damnandum esse, Anathema sit^a.

In this century began the *Croisades*, attempted by Gregory VII. carried into execution, at the instigation of Peter the Hermit, by Urban II. in the year

^z Mosheim, p. 437.

^a Dallæus, *De Cult. Lat.* p. 1021—1050.

54 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

1095. In the following year eight hundred thousand men went forth on this pious expedition.

“The principal motive which excited Urban and other Pontiffs to wage this holy war, arose in my opinion from the superstitious ignorance of the times and the corrupted state of religion. It was thought a disgrace to Christianity to suffer a land, consecrated by the footsteps and the blood of Jesus Christ, to be left in the possession of his enemies; and pilgrimages to holy places were accounted meritorious acts of devotion; though at the same time the Mahometan possessors of Palæstine had reason enough to be alarmed at them. To this motive for a Croisade was added a dread lest the Turcomans, who had already conquered a great part of the Greek Empire, should pass over into Europe and invade Italy. There are learned men who think that the Pope stirred up this war with a view to increase his own authority, and to weaken the power of the Latin Emperors and Kings;

Kings; and that the European Princes concurred with him, hoping to send away the most powerful and warlike of their subjects, and to strip them of their lands and riches. These are ingenious conjectures, but they are no more than conjectures. As soon indeed as the Pontiffs, Kings, and Princes learned by experience what great profits accrued to them from these wars, the desire of acquiring power and wealth were new inducements added to the former.

Yet from these wars, whether just or unjust, innumerable evils of every kind ensued, both in Church and State, the remains of which are still felt. Europe was deprived of the greatest part of her inhabitants, an immense quantity of money was carried away to remote regions, and many illustrious and wealthy families either perished entirely, or were reduced to obscurity and beggary; for the heads of such houses had pawned or sold their estates, to support themselves with necessaries for their journey. Other Lords imposed intolerable taxes

on their subjects or vassals, who being terrified by such exactions, chose rather to leave their farms and houses, and join in the Croisade. Hence arose the utmost confusion and disorder through all Europe. I pass over the pillages, murders and massacres committed in all places with impunity by these pious soldiers of God and of Jesus Christ, as they were called, as also new and pernicious rights and privileges to which these wars gave rise and occasion.

Nor did Christianity suffer less than the State from these miserable wars. The Roman Pontif gained a vast accession of power and dignity. The wealth of Churches and Monasteries was many ways considerably encreased. The Priests and the Monks, whilst their Bishops and Abbots were gone into Asia, led lawless and scandalous lives, and indulged themselves in all sorts of vices, without control. Superstition, which was excessive before, became still more prevalent amongst the Latins: for the catalogue of Tutelar Saints, already

very numerous, was augmented with a crew of Eastern Saints, unknown before in the Western world, and some of them unknown even at home. An amazing cargoe of Reliques was also imported; for all who returned from Asia, came loaded with this sort of trash, bought at a great price of cheating and lying Greeks and Syrians, and either presented them to Churches and Religious places, or laid them up in their own houses, to be preserved there as an invaluable treasure^b."

"The Ecclesiastics of the Latin Church were at this time corrupted to the last degree; those of the Greek Church were not quite so bad, because the distresses and calamities of their Empire checked them in some measure, and stifled those enormities which plenty and ease and laziness produce in ill-disposed minds.

The Monks of the West, most ignorant and profligate wretches, had great

^b Mosheim, p. 383. Fleury, xiii. 615. xiv. 47.

power

58 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

power and wealth, and were leagued in strict union with the Popes, and exempted in a great measure from all other superior jurisdiction.

Some attempts however were made to restore literature, which had sunk so low in the preceding century ^c.”

Mathew Paris says of the Clergy of those days; *Adeo literaturâ carebant, ut cæteris stupori esset qui Grammaticam didicisset.*

From the days of Gregory VII, we find in some regions of Europe, particularly in Italy and France, manifest indications of those persons who by the Protestants are commonly called *Witnesses of the Truth*, namely of serious and pious people who deplored the corrupted state of religion, and the vices of the whole Ecclesiastical Order, who opposed the exorbitant claims of the Pope and of the Prelates, and who, some openly and some secretly, attempted to bring on a reformation. For how rude

^c Mosheim, p. 394. 414.

soever and illiterate and ignorant of Revealed Truths the age might be, yet those few fragments of the Gospel which were proposed to the multitude were sufficient to inform the lowest of the vulgar that the Religion commonly received was not the Religion of Jesus Christ, and that he required quite other things from his followers than the Popes Bishops and Priests either taught or practised, that they made a vile use of their power and revenues, and lastly that the favour and blessing of God was not to be obtained by empty ceremonies, by liberal oblations to temples and priests, by building and endowing Monasteries, but by purity of heart and an upright behaviour.

But they who thus undertook the arduous task of healing the distempers of the Church were frequently unequal to the attempt, and by shunning one fault fell into another. They all discerned the corrupted state of the Religion commonly received, but none or very few of them were acquainted with the
true

true nature and spirit of the Gospel ; which will not seem strange to those who duly consider the infelicity of the times. Therefore with some opinions which were right, they often mixed many which were erroneous. Plainly perceiving that most of the enormous crimes of the Priests and Bishops arose from a superfluity of wealth, they thought that the Church could hardly be too necessitous, and accounted a voluntary poverty to be the principal virtue of a pious Teacher. They all held the primitive Church to be an eternal pattern which the Christian world was obliged strictly to follow, and the conduct and condition of the Apostles to be an invariable rule for the Clergy. Many of them being grieved to see the people place their hopes of salvation in certain ceremonies and in outward rites, inculcated the opposite notion, that true religion was only that of the mind, and consisted in a contemplation on divine things, and despised and rejected all external worship, temples, religious

religious Assemblies, Doctors, and Sacraments.^d

Certain it is that if too much plenty hath a tendency to make the Clergy vicious, extreme want will make them contemptible.

Berengarius, Lanfrancus, and Anselmus gave rise to the Scholastic Theology, by applying Logic and Philosophy to Divinity; and Systems or Bodies of Divinity were now first drawn up. Nor were the Mystical Divines unemployed in their way^e.

The contentions were warm between the Latins and the Greeks, fomented by the Popes and by the Patriarchs of Constantinople, the first wanting to be Supreme, the latter wanting to be Independent.

“The Greek Emperor, Constantinus Monomachus, desiring to pacify this quarrel at its rise, entreated the Roman

^d Mosheim, p. 422.

^e Ibid. p. 423.

Pontif to send Legates to Constantinople, to treat about terms of a reunion. The Pope sent three Legates, and gave them letters to the Emperor and to the Greek Patriarch. But the event of this embassy was extremely unfortunate, although the Emperor, for political causes, was more disposed to favour the Latins than the Greeks. For the letters of Leo IX. full of pride and arrogance, alienated the mind of the Patriarch Cerularius, and the Legates themselves plainly shewed by many instances that their errand was not to restore concord, but to bring the Greek under an absolute subjection to the Roman Church. Thus all attempts to bring about a pacification being dropped, the Roman Legates proceeded to an action than which nothing could be more unseasonable, imprudent, and impudent. They openly, in the temple of St. Sophia,^f anathematized the Patriarch, with Leo Acridanus, and all his adherents, and having laid a copy of

^f A. 1054.

this solemn execration upon the principal altar, they shook the dust off from their feet, and departed. By this abominable procedure all hopes of a reconciliation were lost, and the schism became incurable. The Greek Patriarch returned the affront, and in a Council condemned the Legates, and all who took their part, declared them unworthy of Christian communion, and by the Emperor's order caused the copy of the excommunication which the Legates had laid upon the altar to be publicly burnt. Then followed a literary war, and writings on both sides full of insult and contumely, which furnished new fuel to keep up the fire §."

Berengarius wrote against the corporeal presence of Christ in the Sacrament, and held only the spiritual eating and drinking of him. He seems to have had the same opinion which was afterwards that of Calvin. For this he was persecuted, excommunicated, condemn-

§ Mosheim, p. 425.

64 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

ed, and compelled to recant : but it is thought that he never quitted his first opinion. The audacious and insolent Pope Gregory VII. was much inclined to favour and protect him. Lanfranc, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, wrote in defense of Transubstantiation against him ; and so did Guimond^h.

In ancient times the name *Papa*, Pope, was given to all Bishops, and it is only since Gregory VII. that it hath been appropriated to the Bishop of Rome.

A. 1090. Ildebert, Bishop of Mans, accused of high Treason by William Rufus king of England, offered to undergo the trial by fire, but was dissuaded by Ivo Bishop of Chartres, such an action being contrary to the Canons. Yet Pope Eugenius II. not only approved but introduced the trial by cold water. They used also to say Mass over a cake of unleavened barley bread,

^h Mosheim, p. 428. Fleury, xii. 577. xiii. 70. Cave, ii. 130. Bibl. Univ. ix. 10. 28. Du Pin, T. viii. P. ii. p. 6.
and

and a piece of cheese made of sheep's milk, to discover those who were accused of theft. It was believed that when Mass was said over them, the cake which was laid upon the altar would turn round of itself, if the person was guilty, and he would not be able to swallow the bread and cheese; and from this custom, as Du Cange thinks, arose an imprecation still common amongst the vulgar; May this morsel choke me.

Menage hath given us the Mass which was said on this occasion, and shews to what lengths superstition was carried in those ages of darkness.

There was also an exorcism used, to drive the Devil out of the bread and cheese, lest he should hinder the effect of the conjuration; and two prayers, to beseech God that the mouth of the thief might swell, and that he might foam and cry, and that the morsel might not pass through his throat, till he owned himself guilty, &c^r.

¹ Bibl. Univ. v. 402.

A. 1094. Saint Nicolas called *Peregrinus* was famous in Apulia. He was a Greek, born in Attica. His parents were poor, and he had not learned to read, or been bred to any trade. When he was eight years of age, his mother sent him out to take care of the sheep. From that time he began to sing aloud, *Kyrie eleison*, which he did night and day; and this act of devotion he performed all his life long. His mother not being able to make him leave it off, thought that he was possessed of the Devil, and carried him to a neighbouring Monastery, where the Monks shut him up and chastised him, but could not hinder him from singing his song. He suffered punishment patiently, and immediately began again. Returning to his mother, he took a hatchet and a knife, and clambering up a mountain, he cut branches of cedar, and made crosses of them, which he stuck up in the highways, and in places inaccessible, praising God continually. Upon this mountain he built himself a little hut,
and

and dwelt there some time all alone, working perpetually. Then he went to Lepanto, where a Monk joined himself to him, and never forsook him. They passed into Italy, where Nicolas was taken sometimes for an holy man, and sometimes for a madman. He fasted every day till evening; his food was a little bread and water, and yet he did not grow lean. The nights he usually passed in prayer, standing upright. He wore only a short vest, reaching to his knees, his head, legs and feet being naked. In his hand he carried a light wooden cross, and a scrip at his side, to receive the alms which were given him, and which he usually laid out in fruit, to distribute to the boys who went about with him, singing along with him *Kyrie eleison*. His oddities caused him to be ill used sometimes, even by the orders of the Bishops. He performed various miracles, and exhorted the people to repentance. At last falling sick, and visited by multitudes who came to beg his blessing, he

died, and was buried in a Cathedral with great solemnity; and according to custom, a great number of miracles was wrought at his tomb^k.

It was still the custom at this time to receive the Sacrament in both kinds^l.

A. 1096. The Croisez, or pious Pilgrims, set out in vast numbers for the holy war. All were not animated with the same sort of zeal. Some went, because they would not leave their friends and companions; some, who were military men, because they would not pass for poltroons; some through levity and the love of rambling; some who were deeply in debt, that they might escape from their creditors. Many Monks flung off the frock, and took up arms, and an army of women accompanied them, dressed like men, and carrying on the trade of prostitutes.

Not long after, a second host set forth, in number two hundred thou-

^k Fleury, xiii. 586.

^l Ibid. 611.

sand,

land, without a commander, and without discipline. These pilgrims resolved to fall upon the Jews, wheresoever they found them, and to destroy them. They did so, particularly at Cologne, and at Mentz. At Spire, the Jews fled to the royal palace, and there defended themselves, being assisted by the Bishop, who afterwards put some Christians to death upon that account. At Worms, the Jews pursued by the Christians, repaired to the Bishop, who refused to protect them, unless they would receive baptism. They desired some time to consider of it; and entering into an apartment in the Bishop's house, whilst the Christians staid without, in expectation of their answer, they all slew themselves.

The Jews at Treves saw the Croisez coming upon them. Some of them took their own children and stabbed them, saying that it was better to send them thus to Abraham's bosom, than to expose them to the cruelty of the Christians. Some of their women fled to

the river, and loading themselves with stones leaped into the water. Others, taking their goods and their children, retired to the Palace, which was a Sanctuary, and the habitation of the Archbishop Egilbert: with tears they besought his protection; and he laying hold on the occasion, exhorted them to be converted, promising them safety, if they would receive baptism. Their Rabbin, Micaiah, prayed the Archbishop to instruct them in the elements of the Christian faith. The Bishop did so; and then both the Rabbin and the rest of them professed Christianity, and were baptized by the Bishop and by his Clergy. But Micaiah alone persevered in his profession: the rest apostatized a year afterwards^m.

A. 1097. The Emperor Alexis was terrified at this inundation of Franks, and thought that their design was to seize on his dominions. He therefore treated their Leaders with much re-

^m Fleury, xiii. 634.

respect, but was resolved to do them all the hurt that he could. And, to say the truth, they gave him too much cause for it. Their troops, encamped near Constantinople, demolished all the best houses in the country, and unroofed the Churches, and sold the lead that covered them to the Greeks themselves. They acted no better in Asia, pillaging and burning houses and Churchesⁿ.

A. 1098. The Croisez took Antioch, and one of their Ecclesiastics found there, by revelation as he pretended, the Spear with which Christ was pierced. Some time after, some of the Croisez called the genuineness of the spear in question; and a dispute arising, Peter Bartholomew, for he was the finder, offered to justify himself by the Fiery Trial. A large fire was made, and he holding the spear in his hand passed through it, unhurt, as it was thought. But though he had been in

ⁿ Fleury, xiii. 644.

72 - *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

good health before, he died a few days after. Thus the credit of this holy Relique remained dubious °.

A. 1099. The Croisez took Jerufalem by storm, and massacred all the Infidels that they found there, in number about twenty thousand. Immediately after this inhuman and bloody work, they repaired to the holy Sepulchre with most astonishing zeal and devotion^p.



*A Discourse on the Ecclesiastical History
from the year 600 to the year 1100.
By Fleury.*

“ THE fair days of the Church are passed away : but God hath not rejected his people, nor forgotten his promises. Let us view with a religious fear the temptations with which he permitted his Church to be exercised during the

• Fleury, xiii. 664.

p Ibid. 686.

five ages which followed the six first; and let us consider with gratitude the methods which his Providence made use of to support it. They are subjects worthy of our attention.

Rome Pagan spotted with so many crimes, and drunk with the blood of so many Martyrs, was to be punished, and the divine vengeance was to be manifested upon her in the sight of all nations.—Accordingly in due time Rome ceased to be the Capital of the Empire, when Constantine had transferred the seat of power to Byzantium; and after the division of the Empire, the Emperors of the West resided at Ravenna, at Milan, and in any place, except Rome. Thus she lost by degrees her splendor, her riches, her numbers. We have seen the deplorable representation of her condition, as made by St. Gregory. Yet was she taken and pillaged by the Barbarians, who ravaged and ruined the Western Empire. This inundation of Barbarians I count for the first external temptation befalling the Church, since
the

the persecutions of the Pagan Emperors. For these Savages, in the beginning of their Irruptions, filled all places with slaughter, burned whole cities, massacred the inhabitants, or led them away captives, and spread terror and desolation all around them. The most cruel persecutions under Rome Pagan were neither continual nor universal. The Pagans had the same language with their countrymen the Christians; they often listened to the doctrines of the Christians, and were daily converted. But where no rational creatures are to be found, there are no Churches; and how was it possible to instruct and convert brutish Russians, always in arms, always plundering, and speaking a strange language?

Moreover, the Barbarians, who ruined the Roman Empire, were either Pagans or Heretics; so that after their first fury was somewhat allayed, and they were so far humanized as to converse with those whom they had invaded, they still detested the Romans, on account
of

of the diversity of religion, You have seen the cruel persecutions carried on by the Vandals in Afric.

These Barbarians, it is true, became Orthodox Christians, some sooner, some later; in whose conversion God shewed forth his mercy, as in the punishment of the Romans he had signalized his justice. But these Barbarians, by becoming Christians, did not totally quit their former manners. They still remained for the most part fickle, changeable, violent, impetuous, acting more by passion than by reason. You may have observed what sort of Christians were Clovis, and his children. These people continued despisers of arts and literature, busied only in hunting, or in fighting. Thence ensued gross ignorance even amongst their Roman subjects; for the manners of the ruling Nation will always predominate; and studies languish, unless supported by honours and emoluments.

We

We see the declension of literature in Gaul, from the end of the sixth century, and about an hundred years after the establishment of the Franks. We have a sensible example of it in Gregory of Tours, who owns that he had not much applied himself to Grammar and Humanities. And if he had not said it, he shews it sufficiently by his performances. Yet the least of his defects in his writings is that of style. There is in them neither choice nor method. It is a confused jumble of Ecclesiastical and Secular History; facts of no importance, accompanied with frivolous circumstances unworthy to find a place in serious History, together with an excessive credulity about miracles. These defects I ascribe rather to a bad education than to a bad disposition; else we must suppose that for many ages together there was not a man born who had naturally good sense and sound judgment. But the best dispositions easily follow the prejudices of education, and of vulgar opinions, when men have not cultivated

cultivated the art of reasoning, and copied after good models. Learned studies did not entirely sink with the Roman Empire : Religion preserved them ; but the only students were Ecclesiastics, and their studies were extremely imperfect. I speak of human sciences ; for as to the doctrines of Religion, in those they followed the certain authority of Scripture and Tradition. Pope Agatho testifies it in a Letter which he transmitted by his two Legates to the Sixth Council. We send them not to you, says he, for any reliance that we place in their abilities and erudition. For how should perfect science be found amongst people who live surrounded with Barbarians, and with labour earn their bread by the work of their hands ? Only with pious simplicity of heart we preserve the faith which our Ancestors have transmitted to us.

In the following ages, the most enlightened men, as Bede, Alcuin, Hincmar, Gerbert, felt the contagion of the times. Endeavouring to embrace the whole.

whole circle of sciences, they mastered none, and knew nothing exactly. What they most wanted was critical skill to distinguish false from genuine tracts. For even then many works were fabricated, and ascribed to illustrious names, not only by Heretics, but by Catholics, and with an honest intention. Thus Vigilius of Thapsus owns himself that he borrowed the name of St. Athanasius, with a view to obtain an hearing from the Arian Vandals. In like manner, when they had not the Acts of a Martyr, to read publicly on his Holy-day, they composed Acts the most probable, or rather the most marvellous that they could devise; and by these means they thought they could best keep up the piety of the common people. These false Legends were principally composed on occasions of the Translations of Reliques, so frequent in the ninth century. They also made Deeds and Records, either to supply the place of true ones which were lost, or absolutely fictitious; as the famous Dona-

tion of Constantine, which was received without the least doubt in France, in the ninth century. But of all the spurious pieces, the most pernicious were the Decretals ascribed to the Popes of the four first centuries, which have given an incurable wound to Ecclesiastical Discipline, by the introduction of new maxims concerning the judgments of Bishops, and the authority of the Pope. Hincmar, though a considerable Canonist, could never clear up this point. He knew well that these Decretals were unknown to the preceding ages, and it is he who informs us when they first made their appearance: but he was not Critic enough to discern the proofs of the forgery, plain and strong as they were; and he himself cites the Decretals, when they favour him.

Another effect of ignorance is to make men credulous and superstitious, for want of certain principles of belief, and an exact knowledge of the duties of religion. God is omnipotent, and his

Saints

Saints have great prevalence with him. These are truths which no Catholic will contest. Therefore I ought to believe all the miracles which are ascribed to the Intercession of Saints. This inference is not just. The proofs of these miracles must be examined; and so much the more accurately, as the facts are more incredible and important. For to attest a false miracle is no less than what St. Paul calls bearing false witness against God, as Damianus judiciously remarks. So far therefore is Piety from inducing us lightly to give credit to them, that it obligeth us to sift them with the utmost rigour. The same holds true as to revelations, apparitions of Spirits, operations of the Devil by the ministry of forcerers, or otherways; in a word, all supernatural facts. Every sensible and religious person ought to be extremely reserved in giving credit to them.

And for this cause I have mentioned very few out of innumerable miracles related by the writers of these darker ages.

ages. It hath appeared to me that amongst them the taste for the Marvellous was far more predominant than the love of truth; and I would not warrant that sometimes there were not at the bottom certain self-interested motives, either to attract profitable oblations from the belief of miraculous cures, or to secure the goods of the church by spreading the fear of divine judgments. To these purposes tend most of the stories related in the Collections of the miracles of St. Martin, St. Benedict, and other famous Saints. As if they who became Saints by despising riches upon earth, were become fond of them after they were in heaven, and employed their credit with God to revenge themselves on those who plundered the treasures of their Churches! I can discern the pernicious motive which induced them so zealously to support such pretended miracles. They thought to restrain at least by the fear of temporal judgments those who were little moved by the dread of

future punishments. But they did not perceive that this was introducing a dangerous error, by reasoning upon a false principle, that God usually punisheth the wicked in this life. This was, to bring the Gospel back to the state of the old Law, wherein the promises and threatnings were of the temporal kind: this was, to expose the authority of Religion to contempt, by grounding these menaces upon it, since they were often confuted by experience, and the usurpers of the revenues of the Church might be seen every day enjoying impunity, and passing their lives in health and prosperity.

And indeed this was not the doctrine of more enlightened Antiquity, and St. Augustin hath solidly proved the contrary, &c.

This doctrine (of the promiscuous and unequal distribution of good and evil in the present state) seems to have been quite forgotten, when the Bishops and Popes so audaciously employed temporal

temporal promises to engage Princes to protect them ; as amongst others, Pope Stephen did, when he wrote a letter to the French King, in the name of St. Peter. These promises and menaces may for a season impose upon the ignorant ; but when they are plainly seen to be void of effect, as it most usually happens, they are only fit to scandalize men, and to weaken their faith, by inducing them to doubt also concerning the promises and threatenings relating to the life to come. Yet this old prejudice and illusion hath continued even in these later ages ; and I can never sufficiently wonder that so knowing a man as Baronius should insist so much upon the evils which have befallen the enemies of the Church, especially of the holy See, and represent them constantly as divine judgments, and on the other hand, set forth the prosperity of pious Princes as sure proofs that they were maintainers of a good cause. And yet the plain truth of History often compels us to

84 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

have recourse to the mysterious depths of the divine Providence, in the misfortunes which have been the portion of the most zealous Catholics ; and the Cardinal doth not discern that a proof which is not always conclusive, is never conclusive.

I return to the effects of ignorance and excessive credulity. Under this head we must place an easiness to receive Reliques ; the examination of which requires, in due proportion, judiciousness and precaution, as well as of miracles. Certain it is that, in general, the Reliques of the Saints deserve to be honoured ; and this appears in the practice of the earliest ages of the Church, in the most authentic Acts of the Martyrs, and in the writings of the Fathers. Remember, amongst other instances, what St. Augustin says concerning the reliques of St. Stephen, and the miracles wrought by them. But he also testifies that even then, in his time, false reliques were obtruded ; and it is no easy matter always to distinguish

tinguish false from true ones. Never would there have been any deception in the case, if the wise precaution had always obtained, not to touch the graves of the Saints, but to leave their bodies entire, and deep under ground, as are still at Rome the bodies of the holy Apostles. You have seen with what firmness St. Gregory refused to oblige the Empress with the head of St. Paul. It was thought sufficient to send, by way of reliques, some pieces of linen or of tapestry which had covered them or their altars.

It was in the East that the practice began of separating and sending about reliques ; and this gave occasion to impostures. For, to be satisfied of the genuineness of these Remains, it would have been necessary to trace them exactly up to the beginning, and to know through what hands they had passed ; which at the first might not be so difficult. But after many ages, it was more easy to impose not only on the common people, but on the Bish-

ops also, who were grown less enlightened and less attentive. And after it was established, as a rule, to consecrate no Churches or Altars without reliques, the want of them proved a strong temptation not to be over-curious in examining them: and then afterwards the profit gained by attracting offerings and pilgrimages, which enriched the Churches and the Cities, proved a temptation of the grosser and meaner kind.

I pretend not by these general reflections to raise suspicions of any particular Relique. I know that there are many assured ones, as those of the Patron-Saints of the cities in which they died, and which have been honoured ever since, as at Paris, St. Denis, St. Marcel, and St. Geneviève. For though they were removed in the time of the Norman ravages, they were never lost out of sight. For the rest, I leave the examination of them to the prudence of each Bishop; and I only add that this examination should be more rigid, with
relation

relation to those which, after having laid concealed for many ages, made their first appearance in ignorant times; or which are pretended to have been brought from very remote regions, and preserved no one can tell how, and by whom. Yet I believe that God, who knoweth the heart, accepts the devotion of those who, having no other intention than to honour him in his Saints, revere with a good disposition Reliques which for many ages have been held forth to public veneration.

We must then distinguish what is of faith, namely the utility of the Intercession of Saints, and of the veneration of Reliques, from the abuses which ignorance and human passions have grafted upon it, not only erring in matters of fact, and honouring false reliques for true ones, but laying too great a stress on the true ones, and considering them as infallible instruments to draw down on individuals and on whole cities all kind of benedictions temporal and spiritual. If we had those very

Saints living and conversing with us, their presence surely could not be more advantageous than the presence of Jesus Christ himself. Now he expressly declares in the Gospel; Ye shall say to the Master of the family, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. And he shall say to you, I know you not. The use of reliques is to remind us of the Saints, and to think of their virtues; else the presence of the reliques and of the holy places will no more save us, than they saved the Jews, who are reproached by the Prophet for confiding in lying words, saying, The temple of the Lord, the temple of the Lord, without amending their manners.

Pilgrimages were the consequence of the veneration of holy places and of reliques, especially before the translation of reliques began. They were more easily performed under the Roman Emperors, by the constant commerce between the Provinces; yet they continued to be extremely frequent under the

the government of Barbarians, and after the erection of new kingdoms. I am of opinion that the manners of those people contributed to it; for being occupied only in hunting and fighting, they were ever in motion. And thus pilgrimages became the universal devotion of Subjects, Kings, Clergy, Bishops and Monks. I will be bold to say that this was a very small appendage to the essentials of Religion, when a Bishop left his Diocese for whole years, to ramble from the extremities of France or England to Rome or Jerusalem; when Abbots and Monks quitted their retirement; when women, and even Nuns, exposed themselves to the perils which attend long voyages. You have seen by the complaints of St. Bonifacius the deplorable consequences; and doubtless there was more to be lost than to be gained by it; and I look upon these indiscreet pilgrimages as on one of the sources of the relaxation of discipline. Indeed they were complained of as such from the beginning of the ninth century.

century. But it was the discipline of Penance which suffered most by them. Before this, they used to shut up the penitents in Deaconries, and other places near the Church, to remain there in silence and recollection, remote from occasions of relapsing. You have seen this in the Sacramentary ascribed to Gelasius, and in a letter of Gregory III. But from the eighth century a contrary system was introduced, and notorious Sinners were ordered to go into banishment, and lead a vagabond life like Cain. The abuses of this rambling penance soon appeared, and it was forbidden to suffer such frightful fellows as under this pretence used to roam about the world, naked and loaded with irons. Yet it remained a common practice to impose by way of penance some famous pilgrimage; and this gave rise to the Croisades.

The abuse of the veneration of reliques degenerates into superstition, of which the ignorance of the middle ages produced enormous examples; as that
fort

sort of divination called the Lots of the Saints, of which Gregory of Tours produces so many examples, and that with a solemn seriousness to induce us to think that he really believed in them. Such were the Proofs called the Judgment of God by water, by fire, and by single combat, which Agobard vehemently condemned, but which Hincmar justified, and which for a long time continued in vogue. Such was Astrology, an object of common belief, especially as to the effects of Eclipses and Comets. These superstitions at the bottom were remains of Paganism, as were some other, and still more criminal, which stand condemned in the Councils of those times. In general, the worst effect of vain studies is a fancy that we know what we know not ; and this is still worse than mere ignorance, since it is adding to it error, and often presumption.

Hitherto we have only spoken of the West : but the Eastern Church had also its temptations. The Greek Empire,

pire, though not totally destroyed, was reduced to very narrow bounds, on the one side by the conquests of the Arabian Mahometans, on the other by those of the Scythians, Bulgarians and Russians. The two latter received Christianity, and their domination produceth much the same effects as that of other Barbarians in the North. But the Musulmans pretended to convert others, and to justify their conquests by a zeal to establish their own religion all over the earth. It is true, they tolerated the Christians; but they employed all possible means to pervert them, except open persecution; and herein they were more dangerous than the Pagans. Moreover their religion had in it something that was plausible. They preached up the unity of God; they abhorred Idolatry; they imitated Christian practices, as prayer at stated hours, a month's fast, and solemn pilgrimages. Their indulgence of a plurality of wives and concubines was an allurements to sensual minds. They employed, amongst

other things, an artifice extremely pernicious to Christianity. Syria abounded with Nestorians, and Ægypt with Eutychians, who were, the one and the other, enemies to the Patriarch of Constantinople, and to the Emperors, whom they accounted their persecutors. The Mahometans made their advantage of this discord, protecting the Heretics, and depressing the Catholics, whom they suspected on account of their attachment to the Emperors of Constantinople, and who thence had the name of Melchites, that is to say, Royalists, in the Arabian language. Hence it is that these old heresies subsist even to this day, and that the Eastern Christians have Bishops and Patriarchs of these different Sects, Melchites, Nestorians, and Jacobites or Eutychians.

By these various ways, the Mahometans, without totally extinguishing Christianity, greatly diminished the number of true Christians, and reduced them to gross ignorance by a servitude which deprived them of the heart and
the

the means to prosecute any learned studies. The change of language contributed to the same end. The Arabian, which was the language of the Rulers, became that of all the East, and is so still. The Greek was preserved only by the Christian religion, and that only amongst the Melchites: for the Nestorians had their divine service in Syriac, and the Jacobites in Coptic, or the old Ægyptian. And thus, the old Sacred and profane books being in Greek, it was necessary either to have them translated, or to learn Greek, which made erudition difficult to be acquired. Hence it came to pass that immediately after the conquests of the Musulmans we lose sight of those ancient Churches of Ægypt, Palæstine, and Syria, once so flourishing, and that for want of writers I have not been able to trace out their successions, as in the foregoing ages. The History of Eutychius, Patriarch of Alexandria, is a proof of my assertion. Though a Melchite, he wrote it in Arabic, and it is full of so many

fables and inaccuracies, even in the transactions of his own times, that it shews the low ebb of literature amongst the poor Christians. It decreased considerably even amongst the Greeks, whether by their commerce with their barbarous neighbours, or by the government of Emperors as ignorant and brutish as were the nations from which they sprang, as Leo Isaurus, and his son Copronymus, and Leo the Armenian. The heresy of the Iconoclasts, which these Princes supported with such violence, proceeded from gross ignorance, which caused them to look upon the worship of Images as upon Idolatry, and to be influenced by the reproaches of the Jews and the Mahometans. They considered not that this worship had been received in the Church by an immemorial Tradition, and that the Church cannot err; which is the grand proof made use of by the Fathers of the Seventh Council.

But the Acts of this same Council are an evident proof of the declension
of

of literature, by the great number of dubious, not to say fabulous, histories and suspicious records which are cited in them, and which shew that the Greeks were no better Critics than the Latins; which yet makes nothing to the material part of the question, because they produce authentic evidence of the worship paid to Images, and found their decisions upon the infallibility of the Church. Another notorious example of the want of Critical skill in the Greeks is that facility with which they swallowed the writings ascribed to Dionysius the Areopagite. In the time of Justinian they were rejected; and an hundred years afterwards they were not contested, when produced by the Monothelites, who laid a great stress upon them to establish the *Theandric* operation mentioned by that Dionysius.

The persecution carried on by the Iconoclasts had almost extinguished literature in the Greek Empire, which revived a little under Basilus Macedo,
by

by the industry of the learned Photius, and continued under Leo the Philosopher, and his successors. Yet the writers of these times are far inferior to those of ancient Greece. Their language is tolerably pure, but the style is affected. They deal in common places, vain declamations, an ostentation of erudition, and useless reflections. The most flagrant example of all these blemishes, and the most apposite to my purpose, is that of Metaphrastes, who hath spoiled so many Lives of the Saints, by endeavouring to embellish them, as even his admirer Psellus confesseth.

Amongst the Greeks, at least full as much as amongst the Latins, one sees the love of fable and of superstition, both of them the offspring of Ignorance. As to fables, I shall only cite the History of the miraculous Image of Edeffa, of which the Emperor Constantinus Porphyrogenitus hath given us so copious a relation. As to superstitions, the Byzantine History furnishes us instances in every page. No

Emperor ascends the throne, or quits it, without presages and predictions. There is always some Recluse in an island, famous for the austerity of his life, who promises the Empire to some great Officer, and then the new Emperor makes him Bishop of a considerable See. But these pretended prophets were often mere impostors. I now return to the West.

Another effect of the government of Barbarians, was that the Bishops and Clergy became hunters and fighters, as well as the Laity. Yet this change did not arrive very soon; for in the beginning, the Barbarians, though they received Christianity, were not admitted into the Clerical Order. Besides, their ignorance, their ferocity, and their natural levity and restless inconstancy made them unfit to be trusted with the administration of the Sacraments, and the care of souls. It was hardly before the seventh century that they entered into Orders, at least as far as I can judge from the names of the Bishops and Ecclesiastics,

clesiastics, who till then were usually Romans. And it is only since that time, that we find the Clergy forbidden by the Councils to wear arms, to hunt, and to keep hounds and hawks for their diversion. Now the violent exercise of these sports, the retinue and the expence which they draw after them, agree not well with Clerical modesty, study, prayer, attendance on the poor, instructing the people, and a regulated and mortified life.

The exercise of arms is still more remote from it; and yet it became in some measure necessary to the Bishops, because of their Ecclesiastical possessions: for about that time Fiefs were established. Under the two first races of our French Kings, and pretty far in the third, wars were not waged with regular troops enlisted and paid, but by the assistance of those to whom Princes and Sovereign Lords had given lands under these tenures. Every one knew how many men, horses, and arms he was to furnish, and he was to head

them, when he was required. Now as Churches in those times possessed extensive lands, the Bishops were often engaged to serve the State, as well as the other Lords. The Bishops, I say; for all the Ecclesiastical goods of each Diocese were still administered in common under their authority; only the goods of Monasteries were separate. The portions assigned to each Clerk, which we call Benefices, were not as yet distinct; and what we now call Benefices were either Fiefs given to Laymen, or the *Ususfructus* of some Church lands granted to a Clerk by way of recompence, or on other accounts, on condition that at his decease it should revert to the common stock.

The Bishops had their vassals, obliged to do them service on account of the Fiefs which they held under them; and when the Bishop was summoned by the King, he was himself to march at the head of his troops. Charlemain, finding this right established, consented to remit it, at the request of the people,

ple, and excused his Prelates from serving in person, provided they sent their vassals. But this regulation was ill observed, and we find, after him as well as before him, Bishops armed, fighting, killed or taken in battle.

Independently of war, temporal Lordships became to the Bishops a continual source of avocations. Lords had a considerable share in state affairs, transacted either in general assemblies, or in the private councils of Princes; and Bishops, as being men of literature, were more serviceable there than Lay Lords. They were therefore obliged to be for ever journeying; for neither the Court, nor the Prince, nor the Assemblies or Parliaments, had any fixed place. Charlemain for instance was sometimes on this side, sometimes on that side of the Rhine, then in Italy, then in Saxony, now at Rome, and a few months after at Aix la Chapelle. He always had in his Retinue a great number of Bishops, who were followed by their domestics and vassals. What distraction! what

loss of time! what leisure to visit their Dioceses, to preach, to study! The Parliaments and general Assemblies were indeed Councils at the same time; but not those sorts of Councils which had been wisely established in each Province, for neighbouring Bishops to confer together. They were national Councils of the whole Empire of the Franks, where were to be found together the Archbishops of Cologne, Tours, Narbonne, and Milan, and the Bishops of Italy, Saxony, and Aquitain. The regulations made by such Councils were indeed the more uniform; but the non-residence of the Prelates hindered them from being put in execution. These Assemblies were designedly Parliaments, and occasionally Councils, from the opportunity offered by the meeting of so many Prelates. The principal objects therefore were temporal, and affairs of State; and the Bishops could not avoid taking part in them, being called for that purpose, as other Lords. Hence came the mixture of things temporal
and

and spiritual, so pernicious to Religion. I have, as occasion served, produced the maxims of the Ancients concerning the distinction of the two Powers, Ecclesiastical and Secular; amongst the rest, the Letter of Synesius, and the famous words of Pope Gelasius, so often insisted upon afterwards. You have seen that these celebrated Doctors were persuaded that although before the coming of Christ these two powers had been sometimes united, Almighty God, knowing human weakness, had since entirely separated them; and that as sovereign Princes, though appointed of God, have no share in the Priesthood of the New Law; so Bishops have received from Christ no power in things temporal. In this respect they are entirely subject to their Princes; as the Princes are equally subject to Bishops in things spiritual. These are the maxims of pious Antiquity, which we see maintained in the eighth Century, in the second Letter of Gregory III. to Leo Isaurus. Pope Nicolas I. addressed them again in the fol-

lowing century to the Emperor of Constantinople. Before the coming of Christ, says he, there were Kings who also were Priests, as Melchisedeck. The Devil hath imitated this in the person of Pagan Emperors, who were Sovereign Pontifs. But after the coming of him who is truly both King and High-priest, neither hath the Emperor assumed the rights of the Pontif, nor the Pontif the rights of the Emperor. Jesus Christ hath separated these two powers, that Christian Emperors might stand in need of the Pontifs for their spiritual concerns, and that the Pontifs might be assisted by the Imperial laws for their temporal concerns. Thus spake Nicolas, who can by no means be charged with neglecting the rights of his See.

But after Bishops became Lords, and had a share in the government of the State, they imagined that as Bishops they possessed the rights which they only had as Lords. They pretended to judge kings, not only in their Penitential Tribunals, but in their Councils; and

and the Kings, little skilled in their own rights, submitted to this usage; as I have shewed in Charles le Chauve, and in Louis d'Outremer. The ceremony of Coronation, introduced after the middle of the Eighth Century, served also for a pretext; and the Bishops, by crowning the King, seemed to give him the kingdom, by an authority derived to them from God.

Even before this, I find a notable attempt on the Royal dignity, which I account to have been the first. It was the deposing of Vamba, King of the Visigoths in Spain, in the twelfth Council of Toledo, in the year 681, under the pretence that he had been condemned to do penance, and to put on the Monastic habit, though without his own knowledge, a distemper having at that time deprived him of his senses. The second famous example is the penance of Louis the Debonaire, after which the Bishops, who had imposed it upon him, pretended that it was not lawful for him to resume the royal dignity.

nity. St. Ambrose did not draw such consequences from the penitence of Theodosius. Shall we say that this illustrious Saint wanted courage to enforce the authority of the Church? or that he was less enlightened than the Gothic Prelates of the seventh, or the French Prelates of the ninth Century?

Count Bonifacius, Governor of Afric, distressed by the enemies that he had at Court, took up arms for his own security, and consulted his friend St. Augustin. This holy Doctor gave him salutary advice for the regulation of his morals, and for the right exercise of his power: but as to the war that he had undertaken, he plainly declares that he had no counsel to give him on that point, and would not meddle with it. He knew how far his own duty extended, and would not go a step beyond it. Our French Prelates, much bolder than he, declared themselves against Louis the Debonaire, in favour of his children, and excited them to a civil war which ruined the French Empire. Specious
pretexts

pretexts were not wanting; Louis was a weak Prince governed by his second wife; and the Empire was all in confusion. But they should have foreseen the fatal consequences, and not have presumed to subject a Sovereign Prince to do penance, like a little Monk.

The Popes, having reason to believe that they had as much of this authority as the Bishops, and more, soon undertook to regulate the differences amongst Sovereigns, not by way of mediation and intercession, but by authority; which in reality was to dispose of crowns. Thus Adrian II. forbade Charles le Chauve to seize on the kingdom of his nephew Lotharius, and was highly offended when Charles took possession of it, notwithstanding his injunctions. But you have seen with what vigour Hincmar answered the reproaches of the Pope, telling him, in the name of the French Lords, that the kingdoms of this world are acquired by wars and victories, and not by Papal and Prelatical Excommunications: and afterwards;

wards; Desire the Pope, says he, to consider that he cannot at the same time be a King and a Bishop, and that his predecessors governed the Church and not the State. And again; It belongs not to a Bishop to excommunicate, in order to give or to take away temporal dominions; and the Pope shall never persuade us that we cannot enter into the kingdom of heaven, unless by receiving the King whom he thinks fit to give us here upon earth.

Such were the great inconveniencies of this pretended alliance of Episcopacy and temporal dominion. In these darker ages it was thought that to be Bishop and Lord was better than to be only a Bishop: but it was not considered how much the Lord hurts the Bishop, as we still see too plainly in Germany and Poland. In this case the axiom of old Hesiod is a good one, that *Half is better than the whole*. But why should we cite Hesiod, when we have the authority of Christ himself, who teaches us
that

that Virtue all alone is more excellent than Virtue with riches?

In this confused state of the two Powers, the Seculars made encroachments also on their side. Often the Lords, without the concurrence of the Bishops, appointed Priests to the Churches situated in their territories, and our Kings of the first race pretended to dispose of Bishopricks, although at the same time, in the Councils held with their permission, the liberty of Elections was always recommended, and the shew of it always observed. The learned Florus, Deacon of the Church of Lions, remarks very justly that under the Christian Emperors of Rome, neither the Emperors nor the Magistrates usually meddled with the election of Bishops, or the ordination of Priests. For the Bishops then had no temporal power, as they never had at any time in the Greek Empire. But in the kingdoms formed out of the dissolution of the Western Empire, the Bishops were so powerful, that it was the interest

interest of Sovereigns to be secure of them; and therefore, even in the most Canonical Elections, the consent of the Prince was necessary. In this matter we must not pretend to establish rights upon facts often irregular, but upon Canons, Laws, and authentic Acts.

What we have said of Bishops is proportionably to be understood of Abbots. Though they were Monks, they became Lords, on account of the lands belonging to their Monasteries; they had vassals, and forces which they led out to war; they were often at Court, and were summoned to Councils of Princes, and to Parliaments. We may judge, from this dissipated life, how difficult it was for them to observe the rules of their Order, and not only for them, but for their Monks, some of whom they always had in their retinue. What a relaxation of discipline must have been caused by their absence, and what distractions, at their return, in their Monasteries! These Lords-Abbots wanting large revenues to defray their
voyages,

voyages, and their other expences, made use of their credit at Court to obtain many Abbeyes, and held them all without scruple.

The abuse went still farther. Monasteries were given to Bishops and to Clerks, although, not being Monks, they were incapable of being Abbots: for Commendams were not introduced till the later ages. Then Kings proceeded to give Abbeyes to mere Laics, or to take them for themselves; and this abuse was common from the eighth to the tenth century. The Lords, without any other formality than the permission of the Prince, went and lodged in Monasteries, with wives, children, vassals, domestics, hounds and horses, devouring the most part of the revenues, and leaving a small pittance to a few Monks, who were permitted to dwell there, for fashion's sake, and who became more and more relaxed in their behaviour.

The same abuse reigned in the East; but the origin of it was more Canonical.

The Iconoclasts, sworn foes to the Monastic profession, had ruined the greatest part of the Monasteries. To re-establish them, the Emperors and Patriarchs of Constantinople appointed the Bishops or the powerful Laymen to take care of them, to preserve the revenues, to recover the alienated lands, to repair the decayed buildings, and to recall the scattered Monks. These Administrators were called *Charisticarii*: but from charitable Protectors they soon became selfish Tyrants, who treated the Monks like slaves, seized upon almost all the revenues for themselves, and transferred or sold to others the rights which they unjustly claimed in the Monasteries.

Such are the effects of the wealth of Churches and of Religious Houses. In all times it hath been a temptation to excite the ambition of the Clergy, and the avarice of the Laity, especially when the former do not by their behaviour attract the love and respect of the Public, when they appear to be rather a burden than a blessing to the people,
and

and when they apply their revenues to no good purposes. Needful it is that there should be funds for the support of Christian societies, as of other societies, for the subsistence of the Clergy occupied in serving them, for the construction and reparation of the buildings, for the purchase of proper ornaments, and above all, for the relief of the poor. In the earliest ages, and under Pagan Emperors, the Church possessed Immoveables, besides the voluntary contributions which were her first fund. But it had been well if the Bishops had always accounted temporal possessions as a mere encumbrance, as did St. Chrysostom, and had been as reserved in acquiring new ones, as was St. Augustin.

Our Bishops of the ninth century were not so disinterested; as we learn from the complaints made against them in the time of Charlemain, that they persuaded silly people to renounce the world, that the Church might get their estates, to the prejudice of their lawful

heirs. Even without employing wicked means, I find some Bishops, allowed to be holy men, who were too sedulous, in my opinion, about augmenting the revenues. The Life of St. Meinverc of Paderborn, under the Emperor St. Henry, is chiefly filled with an enumeration of the lands which he acquired for his Church.

The treasures of the Churches, I mean plate, shrines, and other precious ornaments, were so many baits which attracted the Infidels to pillage, as the Normans in France, and the Saracens in Italy; the lands and seignories excited the cupidity of wicked Christians either to seize upon them by open force, after the sinking of the Royal authority, or to usurp them under the pretence of serving the Church. Hence also came intrigues and Simoniacal contracts, as the only vocation to Ecclesiastical dignities. But here let us not be scandalized at the enormities practised during the tenth century, particularly at Rome. The Son of God, when he promised to
assist

assist his Church to the end of the world, did not promise to exclude wicked members from it. On the contrary, he foretold that there should be always a mixture of such persons, till the final separation. He hath not promised holiness to all the Ministers and Pastors of his Church, not even to the Head: he hath only promised supernatural powers to all those who should enter into the holy ministry according to the forms which himself hath prescribed. Thus as in all times bad men have been found, who without a sincere conversion, and other necessary dispositions, have received baptism and the eucharist; there have been also, who without a call having received Ordination and imposition of hands, became Priests and Bishops, though to their own destruction, and often to that of their flock. In a word, God hath not engaged to put a stop in a miraculous way to sacrilege, any more than to other crimes. Therefore we must not scruple to acknowledge as lawful Popes a Ser-

gius III. or a John X. or others whose scandalous life was a disgrace to the holy See, if they were ordained, according to form, by Bishops. But it must be owned that it would have been more advantageous to the Church to have been always in a state of poverty, than to have been exposed to such scandals.

These enormities were also partly owing to ignorance, when it had taken deep root. After the sinking of literature, good manners and the practice of Christian virtues subsisted still for a time, by the influence of example and education. So they lived at Rome, under Pope Agatho, towards the conclusion of the seventh century. But ignorance daily increasing, a neglect ensued of those religious practices, the grounds and reasons of which were no longer known, and corruption came to that height in which you have seen it towards the end of the ninth century, after Nicolas I. and Adrian II; inso-much that, to raise up again the Roman Church, it was needful, in the middle

of the eleventh century, to call in from Germany men of more erudition, as Gregory X. and Leo IX. Ignorance most assuredly is good for nothing; and I know not what is meant by a pretended simplicity tending to promote good morals. This I know, that in the darkest times, and amongst the most ignorant nations, we find the most abominable vices triumphant. I have given some proofs of this on proper occasions. I did not think it right to produce them all, and I dare not specify them more precisely. There is a root of concupiscence in all men, which brings forth its wretched effects, unless it be checked by Reason assisted with Grace.

There is a kind of crime, of which in these ages we find examples only in the East; namely, Impiety, or an open contempt of all religion. You have seen, and doubtless with horror, the sacrilegious sports of the young Emperor Michael, son of Theodora, who went about the streets of Constantinople with his comrades in debauchery, clothed in

118 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

religious habits, mimicking the processions and other Ceremonies of the Church, and even the holy Eucharist. Photius the Patriarch saw all this and bare with it; for which he was reproached in the Eighth Council; which shews that he was even more profane than the Emperor. For this Prince was a young mad fool, often drunk, and always a slave to his passions: but Photius acted calmly, and with deep consideration, was the greatest genius, and the most learned man of the age. He was a complete hypocrite, talking like a saint, and acting like a knave. He seems to have been the author of another sort of impiety, of having carried flattery to such an excess as even to canonize Princes who had done nothing to deserve it, to dedicate Churches, and to appoint Festival-days to their honour; as he did to Constantine, eldest son of Basilus Macedo, to comfort that Emperor for the loss of his child; thus imitating the authors of Pagan Idolatry. Constantius Monomachus
wanted

wanted to do as much for Zoë, to whom he owed the Empire.

The three vices which in those unhappy times did the most mischief in the Western world, were the incontinence of the Clergy, the pillages and violences of the Laity, and the Simony of both; all three the genuine effects of ignorance. The Clerks had forgotten the dignity of their profession, and the weighty reasons for this discipline of continence. They knew not that from the beginning of Christianity this Angelic virtue was its glory, and was held forth to the Pagans as one of the most striking proofs of its excellence. As then the Church always had a great number of persons of both sexes who consecrated themselves to God by a perfect continence, nothing was more reasonable than to chuse its principal ministers out of this purer part of the flock. The Church was therefore the better served by men who, disengaged from domestic and family cares, were not divided between different objects,

and only thought, as St. Paul says, to please God; applying themselves entirely to pray, to study, to instruct, and to perform works of charity. Accordingly, you have seen that this holy discipline of the superior Clerks was always observed in the Church, though with more or less exactness, according to times and places.

But our ignorant Ecclesiastics of the ninth and tenth centuries accounted this law to be an insupportable yoke. Their functions were almost reduced to singing Psalms which they understood not, and to practising external ceremonies. Living in other respects like other people, they easily persuaded themselves that like them also they ought to have wives; and the multitude of bad examples induced them to look upon celibacy as impossible, and consequently upon the law that imposed it, as an insupportable tyranny. The Greeks were the first, who at the end of the seventh century shook off this salutary yoke,

yoke, by a Canon of the Council in Trullo, which permitted the Priests to retain their wives; and by way of pretext, they pleaded a Canon of Carthage wrongly understood, and the scandals which were now too frequent amongst the Latins. But the first formal example in the West, is that of the Curate in the Diocese of Chaalons, who married publickly, and at whom all good men were offended, as they would be this day. Such was the horror at this innovation.

The pillages and outrages were reliques of the barbarity of the Northern nations. I have shewed their origin in the weak government of Louis the Debonaire, and their progress under his successors. Strange it is that Christians should have been ignorant, to such a degree, of the very elements of Religion and Policy, as to think it lawful to right themselves, and to take up arms against their own countrymen, just as against foreigners. The foundation of civil society is to give up private

vate revenge, to submit to the laws; and to judges as the executors of the laws; and the very essence of Christianity is charity, which obligeth not only to do no harm to our neighbour, but to do him all the good that we can. What sort of Christians then were these? Christians ever ready to revenge themselves upon their brethren by murders and devastations, and whose justice lay in the point of their sword!

You have seen the useless complaints and remonstrances against these flagrant disorders, which were made in the Assemblies of Bishops and Lords: and these were another proof of the ignorance of the times; for a man must have been simple indeed, to imagine that exhortations enforced by citations of Scripture and of the Fathers could wrest the sword out of the hands of Russians accustomed to blood and plunder. The remedy should have been to establish a new set of Laws, like those of the ancient Greeks and Romans, and other polished and disciplined nations.

nations. But where could Legislators be found at that time, wise enough to draw up such Institutions, and eloquent enough to persuade the observance of them? In the mean time, the Discipline of the Church was expiring, and its morals corrupted more and more. The Nobles, posted each in his own castle, came no more to the Churches, to receive the instruction of the Bishops. They assisted at the Service performed in some neighbouring Monastery, or had it performed by their own Chaplains, or by the Curates of their vassals; and even these Ecclesiastics they put in and put out, as they thought fit. Often they appropriated to themselves the tithes and revenues of the Churches. The Bishops could not correct those Priests, protected by their Lords, much less the Lords themselves, nor visit their Dioceses, nor assemble together to hold Councils; and sometimes they were under a necessity to take arms, and to defend the Church lands against the Nobles.

I account Simony also as the result of ignorance. A man enlightened, and persuaded of the Truth of the Christian religion, will never think to use it as a trade to get money. He will know that it is of a sublimer nature, and that it proposeth blessings of a different kind. Simon himself offered money to St. Peter, because he knew nothing concerning the heavenly doctrines, and only wanted to receive a power of communicating miraculous gifts to others, that he might thereby obtain respect and riches. The more sensual and ignorant men are, the more they are affected with things temporal, and disposed to account them the chief good. Things spiritual and invisible seem to such persons mere fictions; they deride them, and think nothing to be solid which they cannot grasp with their hands. Accordingly, I see no age when Simony reigned in so barefaced a manner as in the tenth and the eleventh century. The Princes, who for a long time had made them-

themselves masters of elections, sold Bishopricks and Abbeyes to the best bidders; and the Bishops reimbursed themselves by degrees of what they had expended in the lump, ordaining Priests for money, and requiring fees for consecrating Churches, and for other functions of their ministry. See the discourse of Sylvester II. to the Prelates on this subject. To men who have no religious feelings it seems an extraordinary exploit, a kind of creating power, a turning of nothing into something, to amass riches by only speaking a few words, and performing a few ceremonies. They think themselves much more subtle than they who do such things *gratis*.

Now Simony hath been in all times the bane of Christian discipline and of Christian morals; for the first step towards piety and virtue is the contempt of riches, and a renunciation, at least in the disposition of the heart, even to the goods which we possess. But who shall teach this sublime morality; when
they

they who ought to be the instructors of others feel and know nothing at all of it; when the salt of the earth is itself corrupted? Who on the contrary doth not make haste to be rich, when he sees plainly that neither learning nor virtue raises men to the higher stations of the Church, but only money and favour? Thus, by an unhappy circulation, Ignorance and Corruption of heart produce Simony, and Simony nourisheth Ignorance, and a Contempt of Virtue.

It was also these three disorders, Simony, the lawless violence of the Nobles, and the incontinence of the Clergy, which the holy men of the eleventh Century principally attacked with the most zeal. But an ignorance of the ancient discipline caused a mistake in the application of the remedies. They were of two sorts; Penances for the obedient, and Censures for the refractory. The Canonical Penances were still in vigour at the end of the eleventh century; I have produced ex-
amples

amples of this; and Christians were so far from complaining of their severity, that complaints were made of certain new unauthorized Canons which had considerably weakened them. But it was imagined, I know not on what grounds, that each repeated sin of the same kind required its own penance, and that if a murder, for example, was to be expiated by a penance of ten years, ten murders required a penance of an hundred years; which made the penances impossible, and the Canons ridiculous. The ancient Christians did not understand the thing in that manner. I believe indeed that a repetition of sins of the same kind added to the rigour of the penance, which yet was always submitted to the discretion of the Bishops. But after all, it was measured in proportion to human life, and a penance till death was only required for the most enormous crimes.

When penances by being multiplied were made impracticable, they were obliged to have recourse to compensations

tions or commutations, as we find in the Decree of Burchard, and in the works of Petrus Damianus. These were Psalms repeated, genuflections, scourging, almsgiving, pilgrimages, all of them actions which may be performed without a conversion of mind. He therefore who by repeating of Psalms, or scourging himself, redeemed in a few days the penance of many years, did not receive the benefit which a proper penance would have produced, namely sentiments of compunction excited and fortified by long and frequent reflections, and the extirpation of evil habits by keeping for a long time out of the way of temptations, and by practising for as long a time the contrary virtues. Genuflections and vocal prayers would not produce this change; and much less penances performed by another person; and the discipline which some religious Monk endured in behalf of a sinner was not an healing penance to the sinner. For sin is not like a pecuniary debt which another may pay for

for the debtor in the same species of money, or in an equivalent, and so get him discharged: it is a personal disease, of which the man himself must be cured; and accordingly, an English National ⁿ Council condemned these penances performed by proxy, and gave this remarkable reason, that by such methods the Rich might be saved more easily than the Poor, contrary to the express words of the Gospel.

Forced penances were another abuse. I find such in Spain, even in the seventh century. Afterwards the Bishops meeting with many offenders who would not submit to penance, complained of them in Parliaments, and requested the Princes to compel them by the secular arm. This was a gross ignorance of the nature of repentance, which consists in pious sorrow and conversion of heart. This was changing the state of a sinner, who to prevent the effects of divine Justice voluntarily condemns and

ⁿ A. 747.

VOL. V.

K

afflicts

afflicts himself, into the state of a malefactor whom human justice punisheth against his inclination.

Amongst the forced penances I account the prohibitions of eating flesh, wearing linen, going on horseback, and the like, imposed by the Bishops upon unrepenting offenders. If these sinners complied with such commands, I marvel at their docility: if they did not comply, I marvel at the simplicity of the Prelates.

The other remedy for the disorderly practices of the tenth century was excommunication, and Ecclesiastical Censures. The remedy was good in itself, but by ill management and misapplication it became unprofitable. Censures are punishments to those only who stand in awe of them: for to what purpose were it to forbid a Jew or a Mahometan to come to Church, and to receive the Sacraments? When therefore a Christian is wicked enough to despise the censures, and powerful enough

enough to despise them with impunity, they serve rather to irritate than to amend him; being founded on faith and reverence for the authority of the Church. It is not so of temporal punishments; every man naturally dreading the loss of goods, of liberty, and of life.

It is on these principles that the Ancients had so wisely regulated the use of spiritual corrections. Never was the discipline so strict as in the times of distress and persecution. As they who then received Christianity, entered into the Church sincerely, and after a long trial, they were tractable and teachable, and submissive to their superiors. If any of them would not be obedient, he was at full liberty to depart, and return to Paganism, without being restrained from apostasy by worldly motives; and the Church got rid of him. But even in those times, they avoided by all means, as far as it was possible, to come to such extremities, and the Church tolerated even bad Pastors, ra-

ther than to run the risque of breaking the bond of Unity.

But, when Christians were become more numerous, the Church grew still more reserved in exerting all her authority ; and St. Augustin informs us, not as a new discipline, but as the old tradition, that she tolerated the sins of the multitude, and employed her corrections only against individuals. When a bad person finds himself as it were alone, amongst a great number of those who are obedient and regular, it is probable that he will submit, or that all will rise up against him : but, says he, when the sinner is powerful enough to draw the Many after him, or when it is the multitude that is guilty, nothing remains but to mourn before God, and to use general exhortations, seizing on the occasions when the people are best disposed to humiliation, as in public calamities.

Following these wise maxims, Pope Julius undertook the defence of St. Athanasius, who was persecuted, and wrote

wrote letters in his favour ; and Pope Innocent did the same in behalf of St. Chrysostom : but they took care to refrain from either deposing or excommunicating the Bishops who had unjustly condemned these holy Prelates, well knowing that they would not have been obeyed, and would only have exposed their own authority to contempt. Much more did they think it necessary to abstain from excommunicating Emperors, though heretics and persecutors of the Church, such as Constantius and Valens. On the contrary, St. Basil received at the altar the oblations of the latter. For it was clearly discerned that a different conduct would have only irritated them more. It is true that St. Ambrose forbade Theodosius to come into the Church, because he well knew the pious dispositions of that Prince, and judged that by such rigour he should bring him to a salutary repentance.

But I cannot conceive what Pope Nicolas I. could pretend to obtain by the

haughty and harsh letters which he wrote to the Emperor Michael, the protector of Photius, and above all, by his threats that he would publicly burn the Emperor's letter at a Rome. Did he not know that Michael was a frantic impious youth? To what purpose were his censures denounced against Photius, of whose audaciousness and power he could not be ignorant? Even at that time, towards the middle of the ninth century, they had forgotten the discretion and caution of wiser Antiquity; as if they had nothing to do but to bluster and talk big, without regarding the consequences. The ordinary forms of Excommunication being enfeebled and worn out, as it were, by too frequent use, new ones were added, to make the thing more terrible; and they employed the names of Korah, Dathan, Abiram, and Judas Iscariot, with all the maledictions in the hundred and ninth Psalm, accompanied with the putting out of candles, and the ringing of bells. Methinks I see

fee a feeble old man, who, finding himself despised by his children, and not able to get out of his bed, to chastize them, as formerly, flings at them every thing that he finds under his hand, to satisfy his impotent anger, and, raising his voice, loads them with all the imprecations that he can devise. But in the tenth and eleventh centuries, they departed more and more from the moderation of earlier times. The Bishops considered not the effects of their censures, but only their own power, and the utmost rigour of their rights; as if by a fatal necessity they had been obliged to pronounce Canonical pains and penalties against all those who had deserved them. They saw not that such spiritual thunder-claps affect not those who fear them not; that this, instead of correcting, only hardens them, and provokes them to commit new crimes; that censures, instead of being profitable, become pernicious to the Church, drawing on the greatest of all evils, which is schism, and depriving her of

haughty and harsh letters which he wrote to the Emperor Michael, the protector of Photius, and above all, by his threats that he would publicly burn the Emperor's letter at a Rome. Did he not know that Michael was a frantic impious youth? To what purpose were his censures denounced against Photius, of whose audaciousness and power he could not be ignorant? Even at that time, towards the middle of the ninth century, they had forgotten the discretion and caution of wiser Antiquity; as if they had nothing to do but to bluster and talk big, without regarding the consequences. The ordinary forms of Excommunication being enfeebled and worn out, as it were, by too frequent use, new ones were added, to make the thing more terrible; and they employed the names of Korah, Dathan, Abiram, and Judas Iscariot, with all the maledictions in the hundred and ninth Psalm, accompanied with the putting out of candles, and the ringing of bells. Methinks I
see

see a feeble old man, who, finding himself despised by his children, and not able to get out of his bed, to chastize them, as formerly, flings at them every thing that he finds under his hand, to satisfy his impotent anger, and, raising his voice, loads them with all the imprecations that he can devise. But in the tenth and eleventh centuries, they departed more and more from the moderation of earlier times. The Bishops considered not the effects of their censures, but only their own power, and the utmost rigour of their rights; as if by a fatal necessity they had been obliged to pronounce Canonical pains and penalties against all those who had deserved them. They saw not that such spiritual thunder-claps affect not those who fear them not; that this, instead of correcting, only hardens them, and provokes them to commit new crimes; that censures, instead of being profitable, become pernicious to the Church, drawing on the greatest of all evils, which is schism, and depriving her of

her spiritual weapons by thus lavishing them away ; in a word, that to cut off all sinners from the Church, is to act like a Prince, who, finding most of his subjects to be guilty, should put them all to the sword, and run the risque of depopulating his own dominions. We see too plainly in the ensuing times the effects of this behaviour.

The Popes, it must be confessed, followed the prejudices of their own times, and carried farther than others the exercise of censures, because of the authority of their See, great in itself, and extended beyond its ancient bounds by the false Decretals. The most eminent Popes, and the most zealous to re-establish the discipline of the Church and the honour of the holy See, after the disorders of the tenth century, departed more and more from the ancient moderation, of which they were ignorant, or which they judged not suitable to their own times ; and at last Gregory VII. augmented the rigour of censures beyond any thing that had been practised before.

before. This Pope, naturally bold and daring, and bred up in a strict Monastic discipline, had an ardent zeal to purge the Church of all the vices with which he saw it infected, particularly of the Simony and incontinence of the Clergy. But in an age of darkness he had not all the knowledge that was requisite to regulate his zeal; and taking false appearances for solid truths, he without hesitation deduced from them the most dangerous consequences. His grand principle was, that a superior is obliged to punish all the crimes that come to his cognizance, under the penalty of being himself an accomplice by his forbearance; and in his letters he is ever repeating the words of the Prophet; Cursed is he who doeth the work of the Lord deceitfully; and cursed is he who keepeth back his sword from blood: that is, who doth not execute the commands of God in punishing God's enemies. On this foundation, when a Bishop was accused to him, as guilty of Simony, or of some other crime,

138 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

crime, he immediately cited him to Rome. If he failed of appearing, for the first time, he suspended him; if for a second time, he excommunicated him; if he persisted contumacious, he deposed him, forbad his Clergy and his flock to obey him under pain of excommunication, commanded them to chuse another, and if they failed to do it, appointed another himself. Thus he proceeded against Guibert Archbishop of Ravenna, who paid him in kind, and caused himself to be elected Pope by King Henry. I am terrified when I see in the Letters of Gregory censures poured out so profusely all around him, and such a multitude of Bishops deposed every where, in Lombardy, in Germany, in France.

The worst of all was that he would needs enforce his spiritual with temporal punishments, which were no part of his office. Others had tried this, and I have observed to you how the Bishops had implored the aid of the secular arm, to compel sinners to penance, and
how

how the Popes, above two hundred years before, had begun their attempts to regulate by their own authority the rights of crowns. Gregory VII. followed those new maxims, and pushed them much farther, openly pretending that as Pope he had a right to depose all Sovereigns who rebelled against the Church. These pretensions he grounded principally upon the power of excommunicating. Excommunicated persons are to be shunned, no commerce is to be held with them, and it is not lawful to speak to them, or even to bid them, God speed, as says the Apostle. Therefore an excommunicated Prince is to be abandoned by all the world, none must obey him, receive his orders, or even approach him. He stands excluded from all society with all Christians. It is true that Gregory never made any decision upon this point: the providence of God did not permit it. He never pronounced in form, in any Council, or by any Decretal, that the Pope hath authority to depose Kings. But he took it for granted,

as he did many other maxims equally groundless, and began by acts and deeds.

Acknowledged it must be that these maxims being generally received, the defenders of Henry took refuge in affirming that a sovereign Prince could not lawfully be excommunicated. But it was easy for Gregory to shew that the powers of binding and loosing were given to the Apostles in general terms, without exception of persons, and therefore comprehended Kings as well as other Christians. The mischief was that he carried his inferences beyond all bounds, contending that the Church having a right to judge of things spiritual, had certainly still more right to judge of things temporal; that the smallest Exorcist was superior to an Emperor, since he exercised authority even over evil spirits; that Regal dominion was the work of the Devil, founded upon human pride, but that Priesthood is the work of God; lastly that the lowest virtuous Christian is more truly a King than any wicked Monarch,

Monarch, because such a Prince is not a King but a Tyrant; a maxim advanced by Nicolas I. and borrowed, it should seem, from the Apocryphal Book of the Apostolical Constitutions, where it is found in express words. A tolerable sense might be put upon it, if it were taken for a hyperbolical expression, as when we say of a very wicked man, that he is not a man. But hyperboles are not to be reduced to practice. Yet upon such grounds as these Gregory pretended that according to the rules of order it belonged to the Church to distribute sceptres, and to sit in judgment upon Princes; and in particular, that all Christian Kings were vassals to the Church of Rome, and obliged to take an oath of allegiance to her, and to pay her tribute. Such were his proofs to support his pretensions over the Empire, and almost over all the kingdoms of Europe.

Now let us view the consequences of these principles. A Prince is found, who is unworthy of his station, and

charged with several crimes, as Henry IV, King of Germany; for I pretend not to justify him. He is cited to Rome, to give an account of his conduct. He appears not. After many citations, the Pope excommunicates him. He despises the censure. The Pope pronounces him fallen from his royal state, absolves his subjects from their oath of allegiance, forbids them to obey him, permits, or rather, commands them to chuse another King. What ensues? Seditions and civil wars in the state, and schisms in the Church. This deposed king shall not be so far deserted as not to have a party, an army, and fortified places. He shall wage war with his competitor for the Empire, as Henry did with Rodolphus. Each King shall have Bishops on his side, and the Prelates who oppose the measures of the Pope shall not want pretences to accuse him as unworthy of his See. They shall depose him, be it right or wrong, and elect an Antipope, as Guibert, whom the King his patron shall

shall place in the Chair by force of arms.

Let us go farther: A deposed king is no longer a king: if he presumes to act as such, he is a Tyrant, that is, a public enemy, against whom every hand ought to be lifted up. Let there be found a Fanatic, who having read in Plutarch the Life of Timoleon, or of Brutus, accounts it a most glorious exploit to be the deliverer of his country; or who, wresting the examples recorded in Scripture, thinks himself raised up like Ehud, or like Judith, to set at liberty the people of God; here is the life of this pretended Tyrant exposed to the caprice of a frantic Visionaire, who shall think that he performs an heroic action, and gains the crown of Martyrdom. Alas! there are too many such examples in the history of these later ages, and God hath permitted these dreadful consequences of extravagant opinions concerning excommunication, to undeceive us, at last, by woful experience.

Return

Return we then to the maxims of wiser Antiquity. A Sovereign may be excommunicated, as well as a private person. Be it granted: yet prudence will hardly ever permit this right to be executed. Suppose the possibility of such a case: the power would belong to other Bishops as much as to the Pope; and the effects would be only of the spiritual kind; that is to say, it would be no longer permitted to the excommunicated Prince to participate of the Sacraments, or to join with Christians in the public worship of God, or for them to exercise such religious acts along with him. But his subjects would not be the less obliged to obey him in all things not contrary to the law of God. Never was it pretended, at least, not in the more enlightened ages of Christianity, that even a private person by being excommunicated lost his right to his own goods, chattels, and servants, or his paternal authority over his children. Jesus Christ, when he established his Gospel, did nothing by violence,

violence, but all by persuasion, as St. Augustin observes. He said that his kingdom was not of this world, and he would not even act as an Arbitrator between two brethren. He commanded to give to Cæsar the things that were Cæsar's, although this Cæsar was Tiberius, not only a Pagan, but one of the vilest of mankind. In a word, he came to reform the world by converting mens hearts, without changing the course of human establishments. His Apostles and their Successors followed the same plan, and always preached to subjects an obedience to Magistrates and Princes, and to slaves a submission to their own masters, good or bad, believers or infidels. It was not till a thousand years afterwards, as you have seen, that Christians took it into their heads to form a new system, to turn the Head of the Church into a sovereign Monarch, superior to all Sovereigns even in things temporal. For if he hath a power to raise them up and to pull them down, in any one case

whatsoever, and in any manner and method, direct or indirect, he is, to say the plain truth, the only real Sovereign upon earth, and the Church for a thousand years together knew not or exerted not her own rights.

Gregory VII. suffered himself also to be led away by a prejudice already adopted, that God must shew forth his justice in this world. Hence it is that in his letters he promises to those who will be faithful to St. Peter temporal prosperity, besides eternal life, and menaces the rebellious with the loss both of the former and the latter. Insomuch that in his second sentence of excommunication against King Henry, addressing himself to St. Peter, he prays him to take away from that Prince prosperity in war, and victory over his enemies, that all the world may know, says he, that thou hast all power both in heaven and on earth. Doubtless he imagined that God, who knew the goodness of his cause, and the uprightness of his intention, would answer his prayer.

prayer. But God doth not work miracles according to the fancies of vain men, and seemed to have purposely confounded the rashness of this prophecy. For a few months after, a bloody battle was fought, in which King Rodolphus was slain, though the Pope had promised him success, and King Henry, cursed as he was, came off victorious. Thus Gregory's maxim was turned against him, and if we are to judge by events, there was reason to suppose that his behaviour was not agreeable in the sight of God. Far from correcting Henry, he only gives him occasion to commit new crimes; he excites cruel wars, which set all Germany and Italy at variance; he causes a schism in the Church, he is besieged himself in Rome, and obliged to fly, and to go and die an exile at Salernum.

Might one not have said to him, If you are the sovereign disposer of temporal prosperity, why do you not take a share of it yourself? If you are not, why do you promise it to others? Chuse

148 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

which person you will act, the Apostle, or the Conqueror. The first hath no grandeur and power, except that which is inward and spiritual; externally he is all weakness and sufferings: the second must have at command the instruments of this world, kingdoms, armies, and treasures to support them. You cannot make an alliance between two states so opposite; nor reap any honour from the afflictions which your own ill-concerted enterprizes bring upon you.

Hitherto I have principally considered the relaxation of the ancient discipline, and other temptations with which God permitted his Church to be assaulted from the sixth to the twelfth century. Now let us see the means by which he preserved it, to accomplish his promise that he would be always with it, and never suffer it to sink under the powers of Hell.

The succession of Bishops hath continued without interruption in most of the Christian Churches from the first establishment.

establishment. We have the series of Bishops in each See, in the Collections entitled *Gallia Christiana*, *Italia Sacra*, and the like. Many Churches have their own particular histories, in other authentic Acts and Monuments. This is a proof of the traditionary kind: for in all the places where we find a Bishop, it is certain that there was a Church, a Clergy, the exercise of the Christian religion, a Christian School; and we have a right to suppose that the same doctrine was taught there as in other Catholic Churches, as long as we find this Church holding communion with them. The unworthiness of their pastors did not interrupt this tradition. Let the Bishop have been Simoniacal, covetous, ignorant, and debauched; so long as he was neither heretick nor schismatic, the faith and the rules of discipline would still be preserved in his Church, although his own bad example might be hurtful to particular persons.

This hath been principally the case at Rome. God permitted that during the tenth century the primary See should be filled with the most unworthy occupants, either through the infamy of their birth, or their personal vices : but he did not permit any error against sound doctrine to slide in, or the indignity of the persons to hurt the authority of that See. Those times, wretched as they were in other respects, had no schism ; and those Popes, so contemptible in themselves, were acknowledged as Heads of the Universal Church, in the East, as well as in the West, and in the remotest provinces of the North. The Archbishops requested the Pall from them, and addresses were made to them, as to their predecessors, for the translations of Bishops, the erection of new Churches, and the grants of privileges. Under these unworthy Popes Rome ceased not to be the centre of Catholic unity.

During the five centuries which we are surveying Councils were continued
to

to be held, and even General ones, as the Sixth, Seventh, and Eighth. True it is that Provincial Councils were not so frequent as in the first six ages, principally in the West, where the constitution of the State temporal did not favour them, both on account of the incursions of Barbarians, and the civil wars, and the more private wars amongst the Nobles. But still it was never forgotten that they ought to be held, and the ordinance of the Nicene Council was often cited, that they should be called together twice every year. Of this the Popes took care to set an example, and ordinarily had one in Lent, and another in November, as we see under Leo IX, Alexander II, and Gregory VII; the last of whom, jealous as he was of his own authority, yet never acted without the concurrence of a Council.

I have marked out the inconveniences of the national Councils, whether in Spain under Gothic Kings, or of France under the second race of their

Kings; but yet, Councils they were, The Bishops met together, discoursed together concerning their duty, consulted and instructed one another. Ecclesiastical affairs were there discussed, and judgment pronounced even upon Bishops. The Scriptures and the Canons were the regulators of these judgments, and they were consulted, before they opined upon each article. Of this you have seen numberless instances.

Although the learned were scarce, and studies imperfect, this advantage they had, that the objects of those inquiries were good. They studied the doctrines of religion in the Scriptures, and in the Fathers, and its discipline in the Canons. There was little curiosity and invention, but an high esteem of the Ancients. To study them, to copy them, to compile them, to abridge them, this was their main view; this is what we find in the writings of Bede, Rabanus, and other Divines of the middle ages: they are only compilations out of the Fathers of the

six first centuries; and this was the surest method to preserve Tradition.

The manner of teaching also resembled that of the first times. The Schools were in the Cathedrals, or in the Monasteries. It was the Bishop himself who was the teacher, or under his orders some Clerk, or some Monk distinguished by his learning; and the disciples, whilst they were acquiring Ecclesiastical science, were trained up under the eyes of the Bishop to good morals, and to the functions of their Ministry. The principal schools were usually in the Metropolis; yet it oftentimes happened that there were more able masters in some particular Churches, and then it was allowed to Students to be admitted under them. Now I look upon it as a matter of importance towards the proof of Tradition, to point out how studies have passed successively from one country to another, and which have been from time to time the most celebrated schools of the West. Till the time of St. Gregory, I find none more

more illustrious than that of Rome. But it sunk from that very age, as the sincere acknowledgment of Pope Agatho testifies. Yet St. Austin the Monk, and others whom St. Gregory had sent to plant the faith in England, formed a school there, which preserved literature whilst it was declining in all the other parts of Europe, in Italy by the ravages of the Lombards, in Spain by the invasion of the Saracens, in France by the civil wars. From this English School came forth St. Boniface, the Apostle of Germany, founder of the School of Mentz, and of the Abbey of Fulda, which was a seminary for that Church. England afterwards gave to France the learned Alcuin, who in his School at Tours formed those excellent Disciples whose names, works, and successors I have given in this History. Thence came the School in the palace of Charlemain, very famous still under Charles Le Chauve, those of St. Germain of Paris, of St. Germain of Auxerre, and of Corbie; that of Reims under

Hincmar

Hincmar and his successors; that of Lions at the same time. The Normans afterwards desolated all the maritime provinces of France, and letters were then preserved in the remoter Churches and Monasteries towards the Meuse, the Rhine, the Danube, and beyond, in Saxony and in the farthest parts of Germany, where studies flourished under the Otho's. In France the School at Reims was still kept up, as we see by Flodoard and Gerbert; and I hope one day to shew the continuance of it till the beginning of the University of Paris.

Most of the Schools were in Monasteries, and even the Cathedrals were served by Monks in certain countries, as in England and in Germany. The Canons, whose institution began in the middle of the eighth century by the rule of St. Chrodegang, led almost a Monastic life, and their houses were also called Monasteries. Now I account Monasteries to have been one of the principal means of which Providence
made

made use, to preserve Religion alive in those miserable times. They were Sanctuaries for learning and piety, whilst an inundation of ignorance, vice, and barbarity overspread the face of the earth. The ancient tradition was there preserved both for the celebration of divine service, and for the practice of Christian virtues, of which the younger might behold living examples in the Elder. The writings of many ages were there repositied and transcribed, for that was the occupation of the Monks, and we should have had few books preserved, had it not been for the Libraries of the Monasteries.

The sensible Reader cannot be too much upon his guard against the prejudices of the Protestants and of some libertine Catholics, with relation to the Monastic profession. With these people, the very name of Monk is thought a sufficient cause to depress the man who bears it, and to account him void of all good qualities. In like manner, amongst the ancient Pagans the bare
name

name of Christian stripped the man of all his virtues. Such an one, said they, is an honest man, it is pity that he is a Christian. We form to ourselves a general notion of a Monk, as of a man ignorant, credulous, superstitious, self-interested and hypocritical; and upon this false idea we pass a rash judgment on the greatest men, we disdain to read their lives and their books, and we give a malicious turn to their most commendable actions. St. Gregory was an illustrious Pope; but he was a Monk. They whom he first sent to England to preach the faith to that nation, were Apostolical men; but alas, they were Monks. You have seen in this History their conduct and their doctrine: judge for yourselves what opinion you ought to have of them. Remember what hath been set before you concerning St. Antony and the Monks of Ægypt. Remember that St. Basil and St. Chrysostom recommended and practised the Monastic life, and think whether they were weak and silly creatures.

I know

I know that in all times there have been bad Monks as well as other bad Christians. It is the imperfection of humanity, and not of the profession. God also from time to time raised up great men to retrieve and raise the Monastic state, as in the ninth century a Saint Benedictus, and in the tenth the first Abbots of Clugni. It is from this pious congregation that came forth the brightest lights of the Church for the space of two hundred years; it was there that piety and literature flourished. If they were not altogether such as they had been five hundred years before, if these honest Monks did not speak Latin as well as St. Cyprian and St. Jerom, if they did not reason as accurately and closely as St. Augustin, it was not because they were Monks, it was because they lived in the tenth century. But shew me other men of the same age who surpassed them. However, I confess that the most perfect Monks of these later times did not equal the first Monks of Ægypt and Palestine; and I
find

find two reasons for it, their riches, and their literary studies. The former were not only poor as individuals, but as a community. They inhabited, not waste forests which might be improved by cultivation, but dry sandy deserts, where they built for themselves poor huts, and lived by the work of their hands; that is, by making mats and baskets, which they carried to sell at the nearest villages. See what I have said of them from the report of Cassian and of others. Thus they found out the secret of avoiding the inconveniences both of riches and of beggary, to depend upon none, and to ask alms of none. Our Monks of Clugni were poor as individuals, but rich as a Community. They had, like all the Monks for several ages, not only lands and cattle, but slaves and and vassals. Now the pretence of the good of the Order, or Community, is one of the subtlest illusions of self-love. If St. Odo or St. Mayeul had refused a part of the great donations presented to them, the Church had

160 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

had been more edified, and their successors had kept up regularity for a longer time. St. Nilus of Calabria is of all persons of that age the man who seems to me to have best comprehended the importance of Monastic poverty. In effect, great revenues bring with them great cares, and disputes, and contentions with neighbours, oblige the possessors to solicit the Judges, and to seek the protection of the Great, and sometimes to purchase it with complaisance and flattery. The Superiors of the House, and the Procurators who act under their orders, are more encumbered with business than many fathers of families. The Community must also be consulted, at least, about the more important affairs; and thus many fall back into all the worldly cares which they had renounced, especially the Superiors, who yet ought to be the most contemplative, recollected, and spiritual of them all.

Moreover, great riches bring on a temptation to great expences. A magnificent

nificent Church must be built; it must be splendidly adorned and furnished; thereby God will be the more honoured. Suitable buildings must be adjoined, that the Monks may have all conveniences for observing the rules of their Order; and these buildings must be spacious and solid, for the use of a Community which is both numerous and perpetual. Yet this is a check to humility, and it is natural for all this external shew to make a Monk think too highly of his own person; and a young man, who finds himself all on a sudden magnificently lodged, who knows that he hath a share in an immense revenue, and who sees multitudes beneath him, is tempted to imagine himself a more considerable person than he was when he lived in the world, disregarded, indigent, and perhaps of a very mean birth. When I represent to myself the Abbot Desiderius, occupied for five years together in building a sumptuous Church at Monte Cassino, fetching his marble pillars from Rome, and his artificers from Con-

VOL. V. M stantino-

stantinople; and on the other hand, St. Pachomius dwelling in a little hut made of reeds, and entirely occupied in prayer, and in forming the inward disposition of his Monks; it seems to me that the latter went more directly towards the one thing needful, and that God was more honoured in his humble habitations.

The attachment to literature made also a wide difference between the ancient and the more modern Monks. The ancient studied only Christian morality by a continual meditation on the holy Scriptures, and by the practice of every virtue. For the most part, they were simple Laics, many of whom could not even read. Our Western Monks were for the most part Clerks, from the seventh century, and consequently men of letters; and the ignorance of the Laity obliged the Clergy to prosecute all kind of studies. The first Abbots of Clugni were the most learned men of the times, and their erudition caused them to be sought after
by

by the Bishops, by Popes, and even by Princes. All the world consulted them, and they could not avoid taking part in the most important affairs of Church and State. The Order gained by it; Possessions were augmented; Monasteries were multiplied; but Regularity suffered, and the Abbots with all these external avocations could not have the same application to things internal as was found in St. Antony and St. Pachomius, who had no other affairs on their hands, and who never quitted their solitudes.

Besides; Study interrupted bodily labour, for which a sufficient time could no longer be allowed, especially after the Monks to their Liturgies had added that of the Virgin Mary, together with a multitude of Psalms. Now the labour of the hands contributes more than literature to the preservation of humility, and when the greatest part of the seven hours, allotted to working by the Rules of St. Benedict, are retrenched, it is no longer his system.

A good regulation it may be; but it is no more the same.

Yet it was in these Monasteries that the Ceremonies of Religion were the most faithfully preserved, which are one of the principal means made use of by Providence to perpetuate them through all ages, as so many sensible proofs of the objects of faith contained in the Scriptures. The celebration of Christmasts and of Easter will always remind even the most Ignorant that Christ was born for our salvation, and that he died and rose again. Whilst the Form of Baptism is continued in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, faith in the Trinity will be preserved. As long as Mass is said, a belief will be professed in the mystery of the Eucharist. The forms of prayer are so many professions of faith in the doctrine of Grace, as St. Augustin hath so well shewed. Psalmody, and the Lessons which enter into the divine Service, necessarily engage us to preserve the Books of the holy Scriptures,
and

and to learn the language in which they are publickly read, ever since it hath ceased to be the vulgar tongue. And most certain it is that it is Religion which hath preserved the knowledge of the dead languages. We see that, by the state of Afric, where Latin is now absolutely unknown, although in the days of St. Augustin it was spoken there as in Italy. It is then by an effect of Providence that a reverence for Religion hath caused the ancient tongues to be preserved. Else we should have lost the originals of the holy Scriptures, and of other ancient Authors, and should not be able to know whether the versions of them were faithful.

Ceremonies also are a bar to innovations; they are publick protests against them, which at least put a stop to Prescription, and warn us of the wholesome practices of Antiquity. Thus the office of Septuagesima shews us how we ought to prepare ourselves for Lent; the ceremony of Ash-Wednesday re-

presents to us the laws of Penance; the whole Lent-service shews us with what care the Catechumens were prepared for baptism, and the Penitents for absolution, &c. — The office for the day before Easter is intended to remind us that we ought to spend in a religious manner the night before the Resurrection. If these forms had been abolished, we should be ignorant of the fervour of the ancient Christians, a fervour capable of overwhelming us with a salutary confusion. And who knows whether in happier times the Church may not re-establish those holy practices?

The first Authors who have treated of Religious Ceremonies lived in the ages which I am reviewing; but they all speak of them as of most ancient institutions; and if in their time any new ones had been introduced, they would not have failed to observe it. To these Ceremonies they assign mystical meanings, of which every one may form such judgment as he thinks fit. At least they assure us of a matter of fact;
and

and we may be certain that they were practised in their times, since they pretend to assign the reasons of them. This in my opinion is the chief use of these Writers. But you have seen in the first six ages proofs of our Ceremonies, at least of those which are most essential.

Lastly, These middle ages have also had their Apostles, who founded new Churches amongst the Infidels at the expence of their blood; and these Apostles were Monks. Amongst the chief I count St. Austin of England, and his companions, sent by St. Gregory, who though they did not suffer martyrdom, had the merit of it, by the courage with which they exposed themselves in the midst of a nation, as then, barbarous. Nothing is more edifying than the history of that infant Church, which Bede hath preserved to us, where we see virtues and miracles worthy of the first ages. And indeed it may be said that every age hath had its primitive Church. That of England proved the fruitful source of the Nor-

thern Churches. The Anglo-Saxons, becoming Christians, had compassion on their brethren the ancient Saxons residing in Germany, and addicted to Idolatry. With an active zeal they undertook to carry the Lamp of the Gospel through those vast regions. Thence came the mission of St. Villebrod in Frisia, and of St. Bonifacius in Germany. It is somewhat surprising that for the space of seven hundred years so many pious Bishops of Cologne, Treves. Mentz, and other cities of Gaul on the confines of Germany should not have undertaken to convert the people beyond the Rhine. Doubtless they saw in the attempt unsurmountable difficulties, either from the diversity of language, or the ferocity of these nations so remote from Christian mildness, as I have endeavoured to shew elsewhere. But, without presuming to penetrate into the designs of God, certain it is that he did not think fit to make himself known to the Germanic nations, till about the middle of the eighth century;

century ; and that in this he shewed more favour to them than to the Indians and others whom he hath left to this day under the darknes of Idolatry. Now I find some remarkable circumstances in the foundation of these Churches. First, they who undertook the labour of this Ministry, always received a Mission from the Pope, though in the earliest times, every Bishop thought himself privileged to preach to his neighbouring Infidels. But it is to be supposed that in the later ages the Pope's appointment might be necessary, to remove diverse obstacles ; and in fact I find that St. Bonifacius had to contend with certain independent and irregular Priests up and down in Germany, who acknowledged the jurisdiction of no Prelate. I find also that this holy Martyr neglected not to secure the temporal protection of Charles Martel, and of Pepin, to prevent his infant Church from being stifled in the cradle. I see that afterwards such Missions continued to be supported by
Princes,

Princes, as that of Saxony by Charlemain, that of St. Anscarius in Denmark and Sweden by Louis the Debonaire, and by the Kings of those countries; and so proportionably by others. These assistances were doubtless necessary in such nations: but the conversions in the first ages, brought about by mere persuasion, were certainly more solid and stable. As it was conceived that no Church could subsist without a Bishop, the Pope always conferred this dignity on the principal Missionary, whether he consecrated him himself, or whether he permitted it to be done by others. But he made him Bishop of the nation in general, as of the Saxons, or the Sclavonians; leaving it to his choice to fix his See in the place that should seem to him the most convenient: for as yet the formality of the titles *In Partibus* was not invented. To this first Bishop the Pope gave the Pall, with the title and powers of a Metropolitan, that when the number of the Faithful should be augmented, he might conse-

crate Bishops for his suffragans, out of whom his successor might be chosen, without the necessity of recurring to Rome. Of this we have given several examples.

To strengthen these new Churches, they founded Monasteries amongst them from the beginning, as Fulda, near Mentz, Corbeia in Saxony, and Magdeburg which became a Metropolis. These were Seminaries where the children of the country had their education, were instructed in religion and letters, formed to virtue, and made capable of Ecclesiastical functions. Thus in a short space of time, these Churches were able to support themselves without standing in need of strangers. The Monks also were serviceable in Germany, even in things temporal. By the labour of their hands they began to clear and till vast forests which covered the whole land, and, by their industry and wise œconomy, grounds were cultivated, the vassals who inhabited them were multiplied, the monasteries produced

duced large towns, and their dependences became Provinces.

True it is that in these young Churches the care of things temporal was not advantageous to things spiritual; too much haste was made to grow rich, and particularly by the exacting of tithes. You have seen the revolt of Turingia upon this account against the Archbishop of Mentz, that of Poland, and that of Denmark, which caused the Martyrdom of their King St. Canute. It should seem that more regard ought to have been shewed to the weaknesses of these new-made Christians, and more care not to render religion odious to them. I also marvel that a condescension was not used in permitting them to have the divine service performed in their own native tongue, as it was the practice in the first ages. You may have observed that the Offices of the Church were then in the language most used in each country, that is to say, in Latin through all the West, in Greek through all the East, except in the re-

noter

moter Provinces, as in Thebais where the Ægyptian was spoken, and in the Upper Syria where Syriac was used; infomuch that even the Bishops did not understand Greek, as it appears at the Council of Chalcedon, in the process against Ibas, and in the answers of the Abbot Barsumas, who could only speak Syriac. See also the Subscriptions of a Council held at Constantinople under Mennas. The Armenians have from the very beginning performed divine service in their own tongue. If the nations were of a mixed kind, there were in the Church interpreters to explain what was read; and St. Procopius the Martyr, according to the relation given by Eusebius, performed this office at Scythopolis in Palæstine. In the same country, St. Sabas and St. Theodosius had in their Monasteries many Churches, wherein the Monks of different nations had their Liturgy each in his own language.

As to the German nations, Valafridus Strabo, who wrote in the middle of the ninth

ninth century, testifies that the Goths from the beginning of their conversion had translated the sacred books into their language, and that in his time copies of those books were extant. It must have been the version of Ulphilas, whose translation of the Gospels we have still. Valafridus adds, that amongst the Scythians of Tomos, divine service was celebrated in the same tongue. When the Goths, Franks, and other Germanic people were spread through the Roman Provinces, they were found so few in number compared with the old inhabitants, that it seemed not necessary for their sakes to change the language of the Church. But when Religion was carried into nations where the language of the country was the predominant, or rather the sole, language, I think they should have had every thing granted to them that conduced to instruct and confirm them in the faith.

And yet I cannot imagine that St. Austin of England and St. Bonifacius of Mentz wanted either prudence or charity.

charity. They had a nearer view of things, and perhaps they feared that the people would remain too much separated from the rest of the Christians, if they were not united with them by the Latin tongue, and principally with Rome, the centre of Ecclesiastical unity. Perhaps also they feared the difficulty of translating not only the Scriptures, where mistakes are dangerous, but other books needful for the instruction of Christians. We find indeed as early as the seventh century, in England, and the eighth, in Germany, versions of the Gospel; but this was rather for the consolation of particular persons than for the public use of the Church. I find also that in the Councils of Tours and of Rheims, called A. 813, it was ordered that each Bishop should have, for the instruction of his flock, some Homilies which all could understand. The Sclavonian language was still more favoured; St. Cyril and St. Methodius, Apostles of that people, gave them in their own

176 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

own tongue both the holy Scriptures and the Liturgy. It is true that Pope John VIII. was offended at it; but being better informed, he approved it; and although Gregory VII. forbid it again, the use of it remained in some places.

I must^o confess, I am not moved by the reason alledged by several moderns, that such prohibitions tend to keep up a due respect for Religion. A blind respect suits only a false Religion founded on fables and frivolous superstitions. True religion, the better it is known, the more it will be revered. On the contrary, ever since the populace hath been accustomed to hear prayers at Church in a language unknown to them, they have lost the desire of receiving instruction; and their ignorance hath even taught them to think that they stand in need of no instruction; whilst they, who though ignorant have good natural abilities, are tempted to enter-

^o An honest confession, which deserves to be commended.

tain no favourable opinion of the things which are so industriously concealed from them.

Of this whole Discourse the result in my opinion is, that the ages which we usually account to have been the most obscure and wretched were not altogether so deplorable as we imagine, and were neither deprived of knowledge or of virtue. But we must in every age seek religion where it is to be found, and not be terrified to find both vice and ignorance in the most eminent Sees.

In the seventh and eighth centuries, Religion declined in France and Italy, but it gathered strength in England. In the ninth, it recovered itself in France; in the tenth, in Germany. Whilst it suffered such great losses under the dominion of the Mussulmans in the East, Afric, and Spain, it made them up by new conquests in Saxony, Denmark, Sweden, Hungary, and Poland. There we behold a renewal of the wonders of the first ages: these nations have their

178 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

Doctors, and their Martyrs; and even the afflicted Churches of Spain and of the East have theirs also. Let us then admire the conduct of Providence, which makes all things concur to serve its designs, and from the greatest evils brings forth the greatest blessings. In spite of the redoubled incursions of Barbarians, the overthrow of empires, and the concussion of the whole earth, the Church founded on a rock remains ever firm, ever visible, like a city built on a mountain; its succession of Pastors is never interrupted; it hath always had its Doctors, its Virgins, its Professors of voluntary poverty, and its Saints of a resplendent virtue.

I know what it is that hath brought into such contempt the ages of which we have been discoursing; it is the prejudice of the Humanists of the fifteenth century, of a Valla, a Platina, a Politian. These pretended Scholars and Critics, who had a greater share of literature than of piety and good sense, and who dwelt upon the surface of things, could

could relish nothing besides the writings of ancient Rome and ancient Greece. Thence they had a supreme contempt for the performances of the middle ages; and accounted that all was lost when pure Latinity and ancient elegance was gone. This prejudice passed from them to the Protestants, who looked upon the revival of letters as upon the source of the Reformation. They pretended that the desolation and ruin of the Church was the genuine effect of Ignorance, and that the reign of Antichrist and the Mystery of Iniquity grew and prospered under the protection of Darkness. In this Discourse I have not dissembled the state of the obscurer centuries, nor the causes and effects of that ignorance. But have you found any thing there that struck at the vitals of Religion? Did they ever cease from reading and studying the Scriptures and the ancient Doctors? Did they cease to believe and teach the doctrine of the Trinity and Incarnation, the necessity of divine Grace, the immortality of the

soul, and the life to come? Did they ever cease to offer up the sacrifice of the Eucharist, and to administer the Sacraments? Was ever a morality contrary to that of the Gospel taught with impunity? Nothing can be fairly objected from the irregularities of particular persons, and from abuses which were always condemned as such.

What matters it, after all, if men speak and write ill, so they believe and live well? God regardeth only the heart; impoliteness of language and rusticity of manners is nothing in his sight. There is in Christ Jesus neither Greek nor Barbarian, neither Bond nor Free. See how they who found grace in the sight of God are commended in the Scriptures. Noah was a just man, Job was a man of simplicity and uprightness, Moses was the meekest and mildest of men. A great and just encomium! On the contrary, Scoffers are detested and cursed in numberless passages of Scripture, although for the most part they affect and cultivate elegance of speech, and politeness

liteness of manners. And indeed, Who would not chuse rather to have to do with a man of strict probity, under a rough demeanour, than with a most genteel and agreeable person upon whom no confidence could be placed? We excuse children when they are struck with splendid appearances: a man of sense loves Virtue under whatsoever garb it is found.

Hitherto then you have seen how Jesus Christ hath accomplished his promise in preserving his Church, in spite of all the weakness of human nature, and of all the efforts of the Powers of darkness?



I HAVE here given a translation of this Dissertation of Fleury, on account of the ingenious and useful remarks, besides the historical narrations which it contains. It is drawn up, for the most part, with a decency and moderation rarely to be found in the Ecclesiastical Writers of his Church, except Du Pin^p.

^p See a Dissertation of Du Pin *de Antiqua Ecclesiae Disciplina*; or an Extract from it in the *Bibl. Univ.* vi. 127.

182 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

Fleury, like Du Pin, was a zealous assertor of the temporal rights of Kings, and hath not scrupled to expose the crimes and encroachments of the Popes, for which doubtless he was held in execration by the Jesuits, and by the See of Rome.

As to his polite and artful insinuations to reconcile us Protestants to his Church; the Remarks which I have given on Ecclesiastical History are, I conceive, a full and sufficient preservative against them. One important use may be made of his Discourse: it shews most evidently the utter impossibility of any re-union between us and the Papists, even upon the more^a moderate plan laid down by this Author, and by some others. Between us and them there must be for ever

Litora litoribus contraria &c.

I shall not here go about to combat that baffled System of Superstition and Iniquity, which hath been confuted a

^a See *Bibl. Univ.* v. 448.

thousand times, and which perhaps no Author ever attacked, without giving it a mortal wound. Strong indeed are the prejudices of education, and the attachment to a Church in which we were born and bred, and to the ministry of which we have devoted ourselves; and candid allowances ought ever to be made for them. Else it would seem impossible for a man of letters, a man versed in Ecclesiastical History and in the Scriptures, a man of probity and good sense, to admit the Pope's spiritual authority over the Christian world, the infallibility of Popes or Councils, the celebration of the Eucharist in one kind, Transubstantiation, celibacy imposed upon the Monks, the Nuns, and the Clergy, the worship of Images and Reliques, the usefulness of Monasteries, the miracles ascribed to Impostors, Fanatics, and Lunatics, and a multitude of other things so contrary to Religion and to common sense.

Fleury's Ecclesiastical System is built upon two positions:

First, it appears *à priori* that the Church Catholic (that is, the Church of Rome) cannot err, having a promise of infallibility from Jesus Christ :

Secondly, it appears *à posteriori* that in fact the Church hath not erred; and that Popes and Councils, ignorant and wicked as they were, have not directly established any false doctrine or heresy.

To the second position I answer ;

In the ages from A. 600 to A. 1100, to which Fleury's Dissertation is confined,

The worship of the Virgin, the Saints, Angels, Reliques, and Images was carried to the utmost excess, and maintained by violence, by lying miracles, and false revelations;

Popes, Prelates, and Councils took upon them to excommunicate Kings, and depose them, and give their dominions to others, and absolve the subjects from their oaths of allegiance ;

The

The marriage of Ecclesiastics was strictly condemned, as no better than fornication or adultery ;

The doctrine of murdering Heretics was established by a general consent, and put in execution ;

Christians were not permitted by the See of Rome to have divine Service in their own language ;

The doctrine of Transubstantiation began to be established ;

Indulgences and pardons were given to the vilest of mankind, on condition that they would go and cut the throats of Heretics and Mahometans.

In the *Credenda*, or Articles of Faith, things were required to be believed as necessary to Salvation, which, to speak in the mildest and most moderate manner, were absolutely unintelligible.

If these be not *Herefies*, there is no such thing as Heresy *in rerum natura* ; it is a word without a meaning ; unless we define it to be a doctrine received
by

by the minority, and condemned by Popes, Prelates, and Councils.

To Fleury's first position I say that the pretence of Infallibility is a *Dream* from the *Ivory Gate*. All that is promised of this kind is, that there shall always be a Church of Christ upon earth, that is, a number of persons, or societies, who shall profess a belief in Christ, and an adherence to his religion, in opposition to all other religions; though these Christians may err more or less in doctrine and in practice. If in the middle and lower ages of the Church you want to find men who had the fewest dangerous errors, you must seek them, not amongst the *Catholics*, but amongst the *Heretics*.

As to the rights of the Church and the State, which Fleury hath discussed, the case seems to stand thus:

In a Christian nation every Subject bears two persons, or Characters; that of Citizen, and that of Christian.

The

The civil Magistrate also bears two characters; that of Ruler, and that of Christian.

Considered therefore as Christians, they all constitute one religious society.

In this society, which at the same time is both Religious and Secular; the Civil Magistrate, with the consent and concurrence of the Subjects, hath a right, or rather, hath an obligation to take care,

That the publick worship of God, according to the Gospel, be established;

That, as to points of belief, no other terms of Christian Communion be required, than are plainly and positively contained in the New Testament, as Articles of Faith, required by Christ and his Apostles;

That Ministers and Pastors of the people be appointed;

That they have a sufficient maintenance;

That

That there be a toleration of those who approve not the religious establishment, if they be peaceable subjects, and maintain no immoralities.

When Fleury talks of the rights and alliance of Church and State, it is impossible without smiling (for it is too ridiculous to make one angry) to see that by the *Church* he means the *Bishops*; as though the Laity, the Deacons, and the Presbyters were mere cyphers, mere bond slaves, *quibus sola relicta est gloria obsequii*. And indeed all the Writers, who by the *Church* mean Prelates, or Ecclesiastical Councils and Convocations, or the Body of the Clergy, use the word *Church* in a sense utterly unknown to Scripture and to primitive Antiquity.

But Fleury in other places allows the Catholic Church to mean the whole Body of Christians. To reconcile these things, we must suppose that he considered the Church in two views; the

Remarks on Ecclesiastical History. 189

the *Church Governing*, that is, the Bishops; and the *Church Governed*, that is, the rest of Christians; or as some call it, *Ecclesia Repræsentativa*, and *Ecclesia Universalis*.

As to Excommunication, which Fleury hath also taken into consideration, it seems, properly speaking, to be neither a part of Christian faith, nor of Christian morality, but a mere matter of discipline, and consequently mutable in its own nature, and to be exercised no farther than the common interest requires. Whensoever it is found to produce more harm than good (and how often that is the case I need not say) it may be dreaded, but it cannot be revered.

Kings, considered as Christians, are doubtless as much obliged as any of their subjects to conform themselves to the Precepts of Jesus Christ. Yet Fleury himself is wisely of opinion that Kings should not be excommunicated, on ac-

* See *Du Pin*, in the *Bibl. Univ.* vi. 188. 196.

count of the terrible evils which it produceth in Civil Society ; and it is too well known, to require any proof, that no one practice hath been more cursedly abused, and hath produced more pernicious effects than Excommunication. No man therefore can be very fond of it ; those excepted who consider it as a *Trade*, which turns to a good account, and by which dominion or money are to be got.

A. 1101. Some barbarous nations were converted (if it may be called a conversion) to Christianity ; and usually by mere violence.

“ It may seem hardly necessary to repeat what we have observed before, that the Savage Nations which were thus converted to Christianity were rather Nominal than Real Christians. The religion itself which was instilled into their minds was not that pure and simple discipline which our Lord established, but a certain *Art* of appeasing the Deity by ceremonies and bodily exercises, and in many respects resembling the

the old superstitions which they had been compelled to renounce. Take away the History and the name of Christ, the sign of the Cross, a set of prayers, and a diversity of rites, and there would remain no great difference between their ancient and their new religion.

Many practices were still permitted to them, which were entirely opposite to the nature of Christianity, and mere impieties; for the Priests, a few excepted, took no care to reconcile them to God, but employed their pains in seeking their own profit, and in establishing and augmenting the dominion of the Pope^s.”

In the Asiatic Tartary, near Cathaia, a powerful Prince being dead, a Nestorian Priest, called John, got the kingdom and succeeded him. This is he who is called Presbyter John, or Prester John, of whom many strange things have been related, and many disputes have been raised. His succeſs-

^s Mosheim, p. 442.

for was conquered and slain by Ginghizcan, towards the end of this century^t.

Guibertus, or Gilbertus, a French Abbot wrote an account of the Holy War, or, *Gesta Dei per Francos*. The title of his book would have been better chosen if it had been, *Gesta Diaboli per Francos*.

“ Amongst the Greeks, notwithstanding the most calamitous state of the times, perpetual revolutions in the government, and intestine wars, great regard was still paid to literature and the liberal arts. This was to be ascribed, not only to the favour and the munificence of the Emperors, particularly of the Comneni, but also to the vigilance of the Constantinopolitan Prelates, who feared that the Greek cause would want skilful advocates against the Latins, if their Clergy gave themselves up to ignorance and sloth. The Commentaries of Eustathius of Thessalonica, who hath most learnedly explained

^t Mosheim, p. 444. 449. Fleury, xiv. 610. xv. 436.

Homer and Dionysius, shew the successful industry of ingenious men in cultivating humanities and preserving ancient knowledge; and many Historians of those times, as Joannes Cinnamus, Michael Glycas, Joannes Zonaras, Nicephorus Briennius, and others, are proofs that there were not wanting persons disposed to oblige posterity with an account of past transactions, and able to record them in a style and manner by no means contemptible.

As to philosophical knowledge, no one encouraged it more than Michael Anchialus, Patriarch of Constantinople. His philosophy seems to have been the Aristotelic; for this was the prevailing taste of the Greeks in those days, as it appears both from other records, and from the Interpretation given by Eustratius of the Ethics and Analytics of that Philosopher. Nor yet was the Platonic System quite neglected; for we find that many, especially they who favoured the Mystics, preferred it by far to the Peripatetic doctrines,

and were of opinion that Plato suited best the Honest and Pious, and Aristotle the Vain-glorious and the Wranglers. This dissent of judgment produced afterwards the famous controversy, who ought to have the preference, Plato or Aristotle.

In the greater part of the Western world an incredible zeal was kindled to cultivate and advance every branch of literature. Some of the Pontiffs, Kings, and Princes, who saw the signal service which redounded to the state from the encouragement given to letters, exerted their authority and their liberality on this occasion. Hence were formed Colleges or Sodalities of men of letters, who taught arts and sciences, and drew together a concourse of youths desirous of instruction; and thus by degrees those larger Schools were erected, which in the next age were called Universities. Paris surpassed all the cities of Europe in learned Professors, Schools of various kinds, and the number of Students; so that this city, about the
middle

middle of this century, exhibited the first pattern of our present Universities, rough indeed and imperfect, but afterwards improved and polished. About the same time an illustrious School was founded at Anjou, by the care and direction of Ulger, the Bishop of the place, for various studies, but principally for Jurisprudence. There was already at Montpellier a famous Academy for Civil Law and for Physic. A like School of great reputation was in Italy, at Bologna, whose origin seems to have been elder than this century, and it was chiefly frequented by those who studied the Roman and the Canon Law, especially after the Emperor Lotharius H. had re-established and honoured it with new privileges. In the same province the Salernitan School for the Study of Physic, which had before been in high reputation, attracted a multitude of disciples. These various Academies arising in Europe, Alexander III. in a Council at Rome, A. 1179, decreed that there should be new Schools

196 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

founded, or old ones re-established in the Monasteries and the Cathedral Churches; for those which had formerly been there were either entirely dropped, or extremely sunk. But the superior merit and splendor of Academies and Literary Societies kept these lower Schools from making a figure, and rendered the Papal Decree of small effect.

The authority and dignity of the ancient Roman Law flourished in Italy, and prevailed over the other Laws, after the time when under the Emperor Lotharius II. A. 1137, at the taking of Amalfi, the celebrated Code of the Pandects or Digests, which for many ages had been hardly known, was found and fell into the hands of the Pisans, &c."

A. 1104. Henry V. waged war with his father Henry IV, and deposed him, on pretence of religion, and of defending the Papal power; and Pope

* Mosheim, p. 450.

Paschal II. released this rebellious son from his duty and allegiance to his father and his king. It was the excommunication of Henry IV. that gave his son an opportunity to rise up against him, and he was excited to this impiety by letters from the Pope, who exhorted him to succour the Church of God. What made his crime still blacker, was that his father had shared his authority with him, and had made him king.

This young Prince appeared at a Council, shewing great modesty and humility, and the most profound reverence towards the Prelates. With tears in his eyes, he called God and all the Court of heaven to witness that he had no desire to reign, or to see his Lord and his father deposed. On the contrary, said he, I have been deeply afflicted at his disobedience and obstinacy ; and if he will submit himself to St. Peter and to his Successors the Popes, I am ready to surrender up the kingdom to him, and to obey him even as the low-

198 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

est of his subjects. This godly and meek behaviour of Henry V. drew tears from the whole assembly. So admirably did the young Rascal play the hypocrite!

Paschal afterwards had quarrels and contentions with this Prince, and was driven to grant him some privileges, and to make peace with him on disadvantageous terms; for which being severely censured, he called a Council, and submitted himself entirely to the determination of the Prelates. They therefore rescinded the agreement between the Pope and the King, and absolved their Pontiff from his contract and his promises. Thus the Pope, to get out of the toils, fairly acknowledged the superior authority of Councils*.

A. 1105. Paschal exhorted Robert, Count of Flanders, to make war with Henry IV, and with his adherents, the Clergy of Liege; and promised him and his soldiers the remission of sins,

* Mosheim, p. 457, &c. Fleury, xiv. 71, &c.

and

and a mansion in the heavenly Jerusalem.

The Clergy of Liege on this occasion drew up an excellent Apology, addressed to all Christian people. They declare themselves firmly attached to the unity of the Church, and to Paschal as to the Head of the Church. They hold themselves to be unjustly excommunicated for rendering unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsars, according to the Gospel, and in opposition to all novel traditions. Having taken an oath of allegiance to their King, they cannot violate it without perjury. The dispensing with such oaths is an innovation introduced by Pope Hildebrand (Gregory VII.). He is the first, say they, who drew the murdering temporal sword against sovereign Princes, and by his example taught his successors to do the like. He is the first who absolved sinners from all their sins past, present, and to come, if they would but fight against the Emperor, without requiring from them confession, repen-

Q 4

tance

tance and amendment; thus binding and loosing in a way unknown to Scripture and pious Antiquity, and setting the door wide open to all kind of malice and wickedness, &c^y.

A. 1106. Henry IV. taken prisoner by his rebellious son, was obliged to renounce the kingdom and surrender it up to him; and died soon after^z.

Robert D'Arbrisselles, a wild enthusiast and field preacher, and the founder of a Monastery, made no small noise in those times. He drew after him a multitude of female Saints, with whom he used to lie in bed, but never touch them, by way of self-denial and mortification. His enemies have charged him with these practices; and indeed austerities of this kind seem to suit the Fanatical taste^a.

An Anonymous Author, who flourished at this time, wrote the Life of Henry IV. He is an Historian of singu-

^y Fleury, xiv. 78.

^z Ibid. 82.

^a Ibid. xiii. 622. xiv. 97.

lar integrity and of no less elegance, who, having recorded the things relating to Henry with impartiality and veracity, chose rather to conceal his name, than to expose himself to malice and persecution.

In this writer, says Casaubon, I am at a loss what to admire most, the elegance of style, which for those times is astonishing, or the dignity and importance of his remarks, or the piety which is conspicuous through the whole. If he had lived in an happier age, I should have judged him not inferior to any Greek and Latin Author, and his work not less to be esteemed than the *Life of Agricola* by Tacitus”^b.

A. 1114. Some Heretics, called Manichæans, were seized and imprisoned at Soissons, and burnt by the enraged populace^c.

A. 1118. Amongst the Letters of Paschal II. we find one in which he

^b Cave, ii. 189.

^c Fleury, xiv. 194.

orders,

orders, in the Communion, to give the two kinds separately, and not the bread dipped in the wine, as it was practised at Clugni. He makes an exception for children and sick persons, who could not swallow the bread. Hence it appears that the Eucharist was then given to infants^d.

A. 1121. Abelard was condemned in a Council, for a Treatise which he had written on the Trinity^e.

A. 1122. A Concordatum, or Agreement, was made between the Pope and the Emperor concerning the election of Ecclesiastics, which still subsists^f.

A. 1123. The Bishops in a Council make heavy complaints against the Monks. Nothing more, say they, remains for the Monks to attempt, unless it be to take our jurisdiction from us, and to exercise it themselves. They

^d Fleury, xiv. 237.

^e Ibid. 306. Bayle, ABELARD.

^f Mosheim, p. 459.

possess Churches, lands, castles, tenths, oblations of the living and of the dead. The glory of the Canonical Order and of the Clergy is obscured, since the Monks, forgetting all heavenly views, engross the Episcopal rights with an insatiable ambition, instead of leading quiet and retired lives, according to the intention of their founder St. Benedict.

The city of Antwerp, though large and populous, had only one Priest belonging to it, and he had no authority, because he kept his niece for his concubine. An heretic called Tanchelm took this occasion to seduce the people. He was a very profligate man, but cunning and eloquent. He set at nought the Pope, the Bishops, and the Clergy, and said that he and his followers were the only true Church. He made use of the women whom he had corrupted, to insinuate his errors, and by their help he gained the husbands. When he had drawn over a multitude of people, he preached in the country, arrayed like a king, and attended with guards who
carried

carried before him a standard and a sword; and the besotted populace hearkened to him as to an Angel sent from God. He said that the Churches were houses of prostitution; that the Sacraments were profanations, particularly the Eucharist, and of no efficacy for salvation; and he maintained that the virtue of the Sacraments depended upon the holiness of the Ministers. He told the people not to pay tithes, and he found no difficulty to persuade them in this point. In general, he preached such doctrines as he thought would be most acceptable to the audience, and attracted them not only by his eloquence, but by feasting them with good cheer. He had in his retinue three thousand men, armed and ready to cut the throats of all who should resist him.

Puffed up with this success, he ascribed Divinity to himself, saying that he had as good a title to it as Jesus Christ, having received the fulness of the Spirit. So infatuated were his followers, as to drink the water in which he had
bathed

bathed himself, and to keep it as an holy relique. He lay with girls in the presence of their mothers, and with wives before their husbands. This he called a spiritual work, and the females who were not admitted to this honour accounted themselves unhappy. One day he contrived a new scheme to enrich himself. He produced before the multitude an Image of the Virgin Mary, and taking it by the hand, repeated the Office of Matrimony. Then he added; You see that I have espoused the Virgin: you must make us nuptial presents. He ordered two coffers to be placed on each Side of the Image, one for the men, the other for the women, and said, We shall see which of the two sexes hath the most affection for me and my spouse. Every one made his offerings liberally, and the women put in even their necklaces and ear-rings. After this wretch had propagated his doctrines in various parts about Utrecht and Cambray, he was at last demolished
by

by a Priest, who broke his scull, as they were together in a boat^z.

The man was either quite mad, or a consummate villain, if the things with which his adversaries charge him were true. But as he vehemently inveighed against the Clergy, they might perhaps calumniate him by way of revenge^b.

Guibert, Abbot of Nogent, wrote a Treatise on the Reliques of the Saints, occasioned by a *Tooth* of Jesus Christ, which the Monks of St. Medard pretended to have. He allows that we ought to honour the Reliques of the Saints, in order to imitate their example, and obtain their protection: but he observes that we ought first to be well assured both of the sanctity of those whom we honour, and of the genuineness of their Reliques. He is of opinion that miracles alone are not a sufficient proof of sanctity; and he informs us, by the way, that it was in his time a common opinion that the Kings of

^z Fleury, xiv. 336.

^b Mosheim, p. 485.

France cured the King's evil. He says that the inventors of false miracles deserved the severest punishment, because they ascribed to God what he had not done, and as far as in them lay, made him a liar. He mentions many examples of fictitious Lives of Saints, and of false Reliques; and to shew the caution and reservedness of the Church with relation to uncertain facts, he says that she dares not affirm the resurrection of the holy Virgin, how strong soever may be the arguments which support it, and that she only permits us to think so. He blames the practice of taking the bodies of Saints out of their graves, to remove them, or to divide them, as being contrary to ancient usage, and furnishing opportunities to impose upon the world by false Reliques.

Proceeding to the pretended Reliques of our Saviour, he says that we ought to seek none, except the holy Eucharist, in which Christ hath left us, not some fragments of himself, but his whole body. And here he defends the
real

real bodily presence against Berenger and others.

As to the *tooth* of Christ, which was said to be one of his young teeth, he ranks this Relique with that of his *navel*, which others pretended to have. He rejects them, as contrary to the Christian faith, which holds that Jesus Christ at his resurrection re-assumed his whole body: besides which, it is highly improbable that the Virgin should have laid up such things, any more than her own *milk*, which was shewed at Laon. These sentiments of Guibert are the more remarkable, because both in this and in other of his works he shews himself extremely credulous about miraclesⁱ.

A. 1124. The Pomeranians were converted by Otto, Bishop of Bamberg. He knew that in Pomerania, beggars were despised and hated, and that some Missionaries having appeared in that form, could not even obtain an hearing,

ⁱ Fleury, xiv. 340.

and

and were rejected as poor vagabonds, who only wanted to get a maintenance. He resolved therefore to come to them as a rich man, to shew these Barbarians that he did not seek to get their money, but to save their souls. He took with him men of abilities, with sufficient provisions for the journey, Missals, and other books, chalices, and ornaments for a Church; with splendid robes, and fine clothes, to present to the principal men of the nation ^k.

A. 1125. Joannes Cremenfis, the Pope's Legate, who had published a Law, in a Synod at London, against the Clergy that kept concubines, on the same night, after the celebration of the Mass, was found in bed with a whore, &c ^l.

A. 1128. The Order of the Knights-Templars, the first Military Order, was established. St. Bernard gives a most excellent character to these fighting

^k Fleury, xiv. 346.

^l Cave, ii. 263.

Saints. How well they deserved it, the Lord knows. He observes, which makes the wonder still greater, that these Saints had been for the most part debauched, impious, perjured, sacrilegious thieves, murderers, fornicators, adulterers, ravishers, who now joined to the innocence of the Lamb the courage of the Lion^m.

A. 1130. Two Popes were elected, and a schism ensued. Such Schisms often happened afterwardsⁿ.

At this time flourished our William of Malmfbury.

Inter vetustissimos rerum nostrarum Auctores, et narrationis fide & judicii maturitate principem locum tenet Gulielmus Malmfburiensis, homo, ut erant ea tempora, literate doctus, qui septingentorum plus minus annorum res tanta fide et diligentia pertexuit, ut è nostris prope solus Historici munus explese videatur^o.

^m Fleury, xiv. 387. 479. Bibl. Univ. xix. 508.

ⁿ Mosheim, p. 459.

^o Saville.

A. 1131. A Canon of the Council of Rheims forbids Tilts and Tournaments, on account of the great danger which ariseth from them both to the body and to the soul. Christian burial is refused to those who die in these combats, though absolution and the viaticum is granted them, if they live long enough to request it. But it appears not that these Ecclesiastical prohibitions, though often reiterated, could put a stop to these practices, which continued to be frequent for four hundred years^p.

A. 1139. Pope Innocent II. held a Council at Lateran, where were assembled about a thousand Bishops. In his speech to them he said; You all know that Rome is the Capital of the world, and that all Ecclesiastical Dignities are held and received by permission of the Roman Pontiff, as by a Fief; and without his leave cannot be lawfully possessed.

^p Fleury, xiv. 428.

This is the first time that we find Ecclesiastical stations compared to *Fiefs*, which are altogether of a different nature⁹.

It appears that at this time the Canons of Cathedral Churches claimed a right of electing their Bishop, excluding not only the Laity, but the Curates, and all the Clergy both secular and regular; which was contrary to the ancient laws and practices^r.

Arnauld de Bressé, having declaimed violently against the vices of the Clergy, was silenced by this Council of Lateran, which is accounted to be the tenth General Council. He was afterwards condemned by the Clergy, and burnt alive at Rome^s.

“A. 1140. A Controversy arose about the *Immaculate Conception*, as it was called, of the Virgin Mary. Some French

⁹ Fleury, xiv. 528.

^r Ibid. 529.

^s Ibid. xv. 3.

Churches began to celebrate a Festival dedicated to this Conception, which the English had observed before, upon the authority, as they said, of Anselm Archbishop of Canterbury. Amongst the more eminent Churches, that of Lyon was the first, or one of the first, which adopted it. St. Bernard hearing of this, severely reprimanded the Canons of Lyon, for the innovation, in an Epistle addressed to them, and also attacked the doctrine itself. Hence arose a dissention, some favouring the Ecclesiastics of Lyon, and adopting their sentiments, others defending Bernard's opinion. But after the Dominicans had settled themselves in the Academy of Paris, the dispute grew much more violent, whilst the Dominicans sided with Bernard, and the Academy with the Clergy of Lyon.

The doctrine of the Immaculate Conception soon grew prevalent, as more agreeable to the superstitious devotion and blind zeal of the age, in which a

veneration for the Virgin Mary had already exceeded all bounds.

The Greeks and other Eastern Christians were engaged during this century in a fierce contention with Fanatics of various sorts, who are reported to have believed in a twofold Trinity, rejected matrimony, and flesh-meat, despised all public worship of God, as also Baptism and the Lord's Supper, placed the sum of Religion in prayer alone, and taught, as it is said, that an evil Dæmon dwelt in every man, and was to be expelled by continual prayer.

Certain it is that both in this, and in many preceding ages, there were amongst the Greeks and Syrians, especially amongst the Monks, such sort of men, not profligate, but crack-brained. The accounts which are given concerning them are not entirely to be credited. It is rather highly probable, and many things make it so, that in this detested number there were several pious and religious persons, who incurred the hatred of the Greeks, because they opposed

posed the arbitrary dominion and the vices of the Priests, and derided the vile superstition which was established by public authority. The Greeks and their Eastern neighbours gave all to these people the common and invidious denomination of *Massaliani*, or of *Euchetæ*; just as the Latins call those in general *Waldenses* or *Albigenses*, who were enemies to the Pope. It is to be observed that these appellations used by the Greeks are vague and ambiguous, and promiscuously applied to all, whether honest or wicked, wise or mad, who had an unfavourable opinion of the public rites and ceremonies, censured the vices of Ecclesiastics, and accounted piety to be the One thing needful.

The Latins enumerate many more sects. For as Religion grew more and more corrupted, and the Clerical Order more flagitious, the Popes neglected their own proper duty, and augmented the impiety of the people, by various ways, and principally by the trade of

2. 6 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

Indulgences. The Bishops and Priests were more occupied in gratifying their own lusts, than in promoting the cause of God. In this state of things, good men, who were desirous to save themselves and others, although of slender capacities, could easily discern that true Christianity was lost; and made attempts to restore it. But few of them having either the powers of reasoning well, or a proper share of erudition, in those days of ignorance, they misunderstood and misapplied the holy Scriptures. Hence it unavoidably came to pass that they sometimes departed as much from the design and sense of the Gospel, as from the Romish religion, and passed beyond all due bounds in censuring and correcting.

Amongst the Sects of that age, the principal place is to be given to the *Cathari*, or *Puritans*, who, coming forth from Bulgaria, disturbed almost all the regions of Europe, and were massacred without mercy wheresoever they were found. The religion of this faction was somewhat

somewhat of kin to that which was anciently professed by the Gnostics and Manichæans; and therefore they also were vulgarly called Manichæans, although in many points they differed from genuine Manichæans. However, they all held that Evil had its rise from Matter; that the Maker of the world was not the Supreme God; that Christ had no true and real body, and that, properly speaking, he neither was born, nor died; that human bodies were formed by the Devil, and perished at death, without any hope of a resurrection; that Baptism and the Lord's Supper were of no virtue and efficacy. They all required of their followers, to live hardly and austerely, to abstain from things animate, from flesh, and wine, and marriage. They despised the Old Testament, and only received the New, and particularly the four Gospels, which they held in veneration. To omit other points, they affirmed that rational souls by a cruel fatality were incarcerated in human bodies, and could only
be

be released by continence, fasting, a dry food, and other such like methods.

But of all the Sects which sprang up in this century, none acquired a greater reputation for innocence and probity, by the concessions even of its persecutors, and none drew together more followers, than that of those people who from their Author were called *Waldenses*, and from the place where they first appeared, *Pauperes de Lugduno*, or *Leonistæ*. Petrus Valdensis, a wealthy merchant of Lyon in France, and a very pious man, caused some parts of the holy Scriptures to be translated from the Latin into French, particularly the four Gospels, and some select sentences from the ancient Fathers, about A. 1160. Upon a careful perusal of those books, he saw that the religion which the Roman Church propounded to the people was entirely different from that which Jesus Christ and his Apostles had taught; and desiring to save his soul, he distributed his goods amongst the poor, and in the year 1180, having collected

collected a religious society, he undertook the office of a Teacher. The Archbishop of Lyon, and other Prelates, opposed this innovation; but the plain and holy religion which these good men professed, the acknowledged innocence of their lives, and that contempt which they shewed of riches and honours, caused multitudes of well-disposed Christians to join with them. And thus many congregations of them were formed, first in France, and then in Lombardy, and thence in other parts of Europe, more speedily than could have been imagined, which no persecutions, no punishments and no massacres could totally extirpate.

The design of Petrus Valdis and of his adherents was not to make a new religion, and to propound new doctrines, but rather to bring back the state of the Church, the manners of the Teachers, and the behaviour of Christians to that primitive and Apostolical simplicity, which might be collected, as they thought, from the discourses

courses of Jesus Christ himself. They taught therefore that the Roman Church had departed from its former sanctity and purity in the time of Constantine the Great; they refused to submit to the usurped powers of its Pontiff; they said that the Prelates and Doctors ought to imitate the poverty of the Apostles, and earn their bread by the labour of their hands; they contended that the office of teaching, confirming, and admonishing the brethren belonged in some measure to all Christians; they wanted to restore the old discipline of *Penitence*, which the Indulgences had almost obliterated; and they taught that true Penitence consisted in expiating past transgressions by prayer, by fasting, and by almsgiving; and they added, that any pious Christian was capable of giving proper directions to a penitent sinner, to make his peace with God, and that there was no occasion to confess to a Priest; that the power of remitting sin, and the punishment of sin, belonged to God alone; that

that Indulgences were the invention of sordid avarice; that funeral rites and prayers for the dead were idle ceremonies, since the souls of the departed entered into no middle state of purgation, but went directly either to heaven, or to hell, &c. Their discipline was extremely strict and austere: for they interpreted Christ's Discourse upon the Mount according to the literal sense of the words; and they condemned war, lawfuits, industry in acquiring riches, capital punishments, oaths, and self-defence^t."

Nicolas Antonius, in his *Bibliotheca Hispanica*, enumerates no less than one hundred and sixty authors, all of them Spaniards, who have written concerning the Immaculate Conception^u.

A. 1147. They who had gone to the Holy War, being in great streights, and oppressed by the Mahometans, cal-

^t Mosheim, p. 479. See also Cave, ii. 182. Bibl. Univ. xx. 199. xxiii. 361. L'Enfant, *Conc. de Basse*, i. 9. &c.

^u Amoen, Liter. ii. 412.

led aloud for help from Europe ; and a second expedition was set on foot, by the authority of St. Bernard, which proved extremely unfortunate, and cost Europe an immense waste of treasure, and loss of men.

The Croisez, instigated by some wicked wretches, began again to massacre the Jews ; but Bernard opposed it. Peter, Abbot of Clugni, also declared against putting them to death ; but advised the Princes to strip them of all their money. Even Bernard confesseth that many of the Croisez were the vilest of mankind.

They took Lisbon, at that time occupied by the Moors. Manuel, the Emperor of Constantinople, did them all the mischief that he could : and then the Turks fell upon them, and destroyed most of them.

A third Expedition was carried on, in the year 1189, which like the former exhausted Germany, France, and England to no purpose.

These

These holy wars gave rise to three Fighting Orders, or Establishments of Saints Militant, the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, the Knights Templars, and the Teutonic Knights. The first of these are now Knights of Malta.

St. Bernard was an enthusiast from his youth, and had almost killed himself by Monkish austerities. He refused several Bishopricks, through humility, as his admirers suppose. But it is no wonder that he declined them, since he was far more respected as an Abbot, than he would have been if he had condescended to stoop to an Archbishoprick. He could create Popes, and command Kings, and lead Councils by the nose. His advice was asked by the greatest persons in Church and State; and he was even adored by the common people, who fancied that he was an inspired man, and endued with the gifts of healing.

In support of the Croisade he wrought such a multitude of miracles, that the *Martins* and the *Symeons* were hardly fit
to

224 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

to hold a candle to him. They are collected by Fleury. Read them, and then compare them with the *Lies* contained in Lucian's Dialogue called *Philopseudes*.

Having promised the Croisez great success in the name of the Lord, and finding them soundly banged, and utterly discomfited, he wrote an Apology for himself, justifying his promises, and laying the fault entirely on the vices of the Croisez. You never knew a Fanatic pretending to prophecy, who ever blushed when his predictions came to nought, or ever was at a loss for some paltry subterfuge in his own vindication.

Bernard died in the year 1153, and is called * *The last of the Fathers*: he might also be called, *The Father of Monasteries*, having been the founder of an hundred and fixty. He was canonized twenty years after his death. Du Pin^y hath written his *Life*; and

* *Ultimus Patrum.*

^y *T. iv. p. 48.*

Cave ^z bestows great encomiums upon him ^a.

“The Writers of this age made loud complaints of the fury and cruelty of the Saracens towards the Eastern Christians; and we have no reason to reject their testimony. But most of them suppress the causes of this barbarity, which are to be ascribed to the Christians themselves. By the Laws of Arms, it was allowed to the Saracens to repell force with force; and it cannot be conceived with what face the Christians should require of a people whom they attacked with numerous armies, and destroyed whensoever they were able, that they should take it all patiently, and not retaliate. Add to this, that the Christians, in their expeditions, committed most detestable outrages in the East, and treated the Saracens with the utmost barbarity.

Is it strange that a nation thus provoked and injured should have thought

^z ii. 195.

^a Mosheim, p. 444. Fleury, xiv. 47.

itself licensed to act in the same manner? that a nation not at all inclined to humanity and lenity, and irritated by the calamities of this *holy war*, as it was called, should oppress those of its subjects who were of the same religion with its sworn enemies^b?"

Bernard, who was the constant persecutor of poor Abelard, said of him;

Cum de Trinitate loquitur, sapit Arium; cum de gratia, sapit Pelagium; cum de persona Christi, sapit Nestorium.

"Bernard was ingenious, and in many points of a sound judgment, but of a superstitious and an overbearing temper, who knew how to conceal a domineering spirit under the appearance of great piety, and made no scruple by false accusations to ruin those whom he could not endure.

Abelard, the disciple of Anselm, was the most remarkable person of the times, for wit, elegance, erudition,

^b Mosheim, p. 448. *L'Enfant, Conc. de Pise*, ii. 72. 98.
logical

logical skill, and unhappy fates. A great man he was, worthy of a better age, and better fortune^c”.

One manifest advantage which the Popes foresaw from the Croisades, was that the Princes going upon such expeditions would probably leave their realms to the care of Ecclesiastics; and returning home beggared to their impoverished subjects, would be the more supple and submissive to the Papal See.

A. 1147. Gilbert, Bishop of Poitiers, was accused of an heresy, which consisted of some Logical and Metaphysical quirks and subtleties about the doctrine of the Trinity. Bernard was his zealous opposer and accuser; and they fought together, *more Andabatarum*^d.

A. 1148. There was a Croisade of the Saxons against the Northern Pagans, whom they resolved either to

^c Mosheim, p. 468. 476. Cave, ii. 203. Du Pin, T. ix. p. 108.

^d Fleury, xiv. 635. 661.

228 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

convert or to extirpate. This attempt produced the usual effects, ravages and murders, and then was dropped ^f.

One Eon, a French Heretic, or rather Lunatic, pretended to be the Son of God, and seduced many of the vulgar. He was put in prison, and died there ^g.

St. Hildegardis, a fanatical Nun, and a worker of wonders, had visions and revelations, and was countenanced by St. Bernard, Pope Innocent III, and many others ^h.

A. 1155. King Frederick and Pope Adrian IV. had an interview. The Pope and the Cardinals were enraged, because the king did not perform the ceremony of holding the Pope's stirrup. The king prostrated himself before him, and kissed his feet, and then approached to receive the kiss of peace, as it was called. But the Pope told him that he

^f Fleury, xiv. 656.

^g Ibid. 658.

^h Ibid. 673. xv. 457.

could

could not grant him that favour, till he had paid the Pope the honour which all orthodox Emperors had shewed to his predecessors, out of respect to the holy Apostles. The King demurred, and the next day was spent in conferences about it. At last, the King consulted the old Lords, who had accompanied Lotharius at his interview with Pope Innocent, and being assured that such was the custom, both by their testimony, and by ancient monuments, he performed the office of Groom to the Pope, and held his stirrupⁱ.

A. 1158. Gratian's Decree, or his Collections of Canons, though full of ignorance and of blunders, and magnifying the Popes authority beyond all bounds, passed for Ecclesiastical Law in this time, and in the three following centuries. He was a Benedictin Monk^k.

ⁱ Fleury, xv. 9. Cave, ii. 230.

^k Fleury, xv. 54. Cave, ii. 215.

A. 1160. Some foreign Heretics were found in England, and condemned by the Bishops. Then they were beaten with sticks, scourged, burnt in the face, and turned adrift; and no person being permitted to lodge or to feed them, they all perished with cold and hunger. To have hanged them would have been mercy compared with such usage¹.

Petrus Blesensis primus omnium fuit, qui in re Eucharistica Transubstantiationis vocabulum usurpasse dicitur^m.

At this time flourished Joannes Cinnamus, a Greek Historian, and a good writer.

Dictio ejus purior est tersiorque quam aliorum esse Græculorum solet: imo Xenophontis ipsius, quem in Præfatione laudat, æmulus estⁿ.

A. 1166. Demetrius, a Greek, an illiterate man, and a great pretender to The-

¹ Fleury, xv. 113.

^m Cave, ii. 233.

ⁿ G. J. Vossius. Cave, ii. 235.

ological knowledge, broached a notion that Christ was equal to his Father in all respects, that is, I suppose, both as man and as God. A Council of Constantinople condemned his doctrine^o.

Henry II, King of England, came to Normandy, and called an Assembly of Prelates and Barons, and appointed a collection of money for the relief of the Holy Land, at the request and after the example of the King of France, and in execution of the Decree of Pope Alexander. This assessment was laid upon all persons, without exception, and was to last five years. It seems to have been the first instance of a subsidy for this purpose^p.

A. 1167. Some Manicheans, as they were called, were burnt at Burgundy^q.

A. 1168. Pope Alexander submitted to the Bishop of Roschild the Island of

^o Fleury, xv. 244.

^p Ibid. 221.

^q Ibid. 274.

Rugia, newly converted. For Valdemar, King of Denmark, had conquered the Sclavonian Rugians, inhabitants of that island. He besieged their capital, which surrendered to him. The first articles of capitulation were, that they should deliver up to the King their Idol, called *Suantovit*, with all its treasures; that they should give up without ransom all their Christian captives; and that they should themselves embrace Christianity. *Suantovit*, whom these Barbarians held to be their supreme God, was originally the Martyr *Saint Vitus*. Some Saxon Monks, who honoured the Reliques of this Saint, had formerly introduced the Gospel into Rugia, and had founded a Church there, dedicated to their Patron-saint: but these people relapsing into Idolatry, forgot the true God, and in his stead worshiped this Martyr, called him *Suantovit*, and made an Image of him. So dangerous is it, as Fleury himself observes, to teach Pagan Idolaters too soon the worship of Saints, and of their Images,

Images, before they have been well instructed and confirmed in the belief of the true God.

Suantovit had a magnificent temple in the city: his Idol was gigantic, and had four heads, two looking forwards, and two backwards. In his right hand he held an horn, adorned with various metals. His Pontiff filled it every year with wine; and as this liquor wasted, or not, he foretold the plenty or sterility of the year. To this Idol they sacrificed animals, and then feasted upon them; they also sacrificed men, but only Christians. All the country paid tributes and oblations to this Deity, and his Pontiff was a much more considerable person than the King^r.

A. 1170. Saxo Grammaticus, a most elegant writer, for the age in which he lived, wrote the History of his Countrymen the Danes^s.

^r Fleury, xv. 278.

^s Cave ii. 241.

A. 1177.

A. 1177. The Emperor Frederic made peace with Pope Alexander III.

“ Some have reported that this Pontiff put his foot upon the neck of the prostrate Emperor, and repeated the words of the xcth Psalm; *Super aspidem et basiliscum ambulabis; et conculcabis leonem et draconem.* But it is now the general ^t opinion that the story is not built upon sufficient authority.

Alexander, who made himself famous by this war with Frederic, had also violent contentions with Henry II. of England, on account of Thomas Becket.

He secured the Ecclesiastical authority, and particularly the power of the Roman Pontiffs, not only by arms, but by artifice, and by enacting new Laws. For in ^u the third Lateran Council, he made a Decree that for the future, to avoid the usual contentions and disturbances at the election of

^t See *Bibl. Univ.* xiv. 6.

^u A. 1179.

a Pope, the right of chusing him should be vested in the Cardinals alone, and he should be a lawful Pope, who had the suffrages of two thirds of the College of Cardinals. This Law still continues in force from its establishment, and by it not only the people, but the Roman Clergy are excluded from any share in the nomination of Popes.

He was the first Pontiff who in the same Council proclaimed an Holy War against Heretics, who at that time disturbed the Catholic Church, and particularly some Provinces of France.

He took away from the Bishops, and even from General Councils, the right of appointing and nominating those who should be publicly worshiped as Saints; and added *Canonization*, as it is called, to the *Major Causes*, that is to those which pertain to the cognizance of the Pope alone.

He also, to pass over lesser exploits, put in actual practice the power which the Pontiffs had claimed, from the time
of

of Gregory VII. to create Kings. For he^x gave the Royal title and dignity to Alphonfus I. Duke of Lusitania, who before, under Lucius II. had subjected his Province and made it tributary to the See of Rome” y.

Thomas Becket was most justly canonized by the Pope, since he lost his life for maintaining Popish innovations and the tyrannical power which the Church, as they called it, usurped over the State. His blessed bones wrought numberless miracles, till Henry VIII. demolished them z.

“A. 1173. At this time the Templars acted the part of free-booters and murderers. A Prince of the Assassins in Phoenicia sent a deputy to the King of Jerusalem, declaring himself and his people inclined to receive the Christian religion. The King sent him back to his Master, with one of his own guards

^x A. 1179.

^y Mosheim, p. 461. Cave, ii. 232.

^z See *Stillingfleet*, vol. v. p. 710.

to protect him. But the Templars assassinated the deputy, as he was returning home; and the King was unable to chastize or restrain them. The Knights Templars and Hospitallers had scarcely been established sixty years before they were corrupted to such a degree, that both Christian and Mahometan writers, though seldom concurring in the same sentiments, agree in describing them as the vilest of mankind.

The Assassins were a sect of Mahometans, who arose in the year 891, when Carmat, a pretended prophet in Arabia, drew after him many followers. He fasted, and laboured with his hands, and prayed fifty times a day. He promised to re-establish the family of Ali, and to dethrone the Califs. He released his disciples from the most troublesome observances of their religion, permitting them to drink wine, and to eat any kind of food. By this indulgence, joined to the hopes of plunder, he collected a great army, and ravaged the dominions of the Calif. He had a series of successors,

fors, of whom the most famous was Abou-Taher, who having desolated the provinces with an army of an hundred thousand men, and robbed the caravans of the pilgrims ^a, took Mecca, murdered all the pilgrims who were assembled in the temple, and carried away the *black stone*, which was the object of their devotion, and caused the pilgrimage to cease for twelve years.

Afterwards these Carmatians, being enfeebled, kept their religion concealed, and mixed themselves with the Mahometans. In the year 1090, they were settled in Persia; where Hacen, their Chief, receiving a threatening message from the Sultan, commanded one of his subjects, in the presence of the messenger, to fling himself from the top of a tower, and another to kill himself, which they instantly performed. Then Hacen said to the messenger, Tell your master that I have seventy thousand men ready to do as much. The Carmatians, unknown and desperate, went about and

^a A. 929.

murdered

murdered several Princes in a treacherous way. Historians call their Prince *The old man of the mountain*, which is a literal translation of his Arabic name; and as they commonly made use of the poinard, they were called *Hassissins*, which we have changed to *Assassins*.

The Jew, Benjamin of Tudela, speaks of them in his Voyages, which end at the year 1173. His Relations are full of fables, and gross Geographical errors, so that he is justly suspected of writing what he had heard from others concerning places which he pretends to have visited.

This is the time of the first famous Rabbins. After the Talmud, which was completed in the year 500, the Jews have only a few books written before 1000. From that time, literature began to revive amongst them, and treatises were composed by Nathan, Abenezra of Spain, Solomon Jarchi of France, Maimonides of Corduba, and David Kimhi of Spain ^b.

^b Fleury, xv. 377.

A. 1175. In a Council at London, it is decreed in one of the Canons ;

The Eucharist shall not be given dipped, under pretence of making the Communion more complete.

It was then the more usual custom to receive the Eucharist only in one kind^c.

Pope Alexander approved a new Military Order of St. James in Spain, consisting of Clerks and of Knights, the former observers of celibacy, the latter married men, whose wives were accounted sisters of the Order. Their business was to wage war with the Saracens, &c^d.

A. 1176. Petrus Comestor published his Scholastic History, a very paltry performance, and yet received with such applause, that for three hundred years it was accounted a Body of Positive Theology, and held the same rank with

^c Fleury, xv. 402.

^d Ibid. 406.

the Sentences of Peter Lombard, and Gratian's Decretals. This might give rise to a fable believed for a long time, that these three Authors were brethren.

A. 1179. In a Council of Lateran, the fourth Canon forbids Archbishops and Bishops to impoverish and pillage the Clergy and the Churches by their exactions at their visitations. It adds;

If a Bishop ordains a Priest or a Deacon, without assigning him a certain Title for his subsistence, he shall maintain him, till he gives him some Ecclesiastical revenue; unless the Clerk can subsist by his own patrimony.

This is the first Canon that mentions a patrimony, or an estate, as serving for an Ecclesiastical Title.

The twenty third Canon says;

Wheresoever there are Lepers numerous enough to form a society, and to have a Church, a Church-yard, and a Priest to officiate, this favour shall be granted to them, and they shall also be

242 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

exempted from paying tithes of the fruits of their gardens, and of their cattle.

This is likewise the first constitution that I have observed concerning Societies of Lepers^e.

At this Council the Pope condemned, as *heretical*, this Proposition of Peter Lombard;

Jesus Christ, considered as man, is not any thing, or, something^f.

But *nonsense* can hardly be called *heresy*.

The Pope at the same time consecrated two English Bishops, and two Scots. Of the Scots, one came to Rome with only one horse; the other on foot, with only one companion. There came also an Irish Bishop, who had no other revenue than the milk of three cows; and when the cows ceased to yield milk, his Diocesans furnished him with three others.

^e Fleury, xv. 466.

^f Cave, ii. 220.

This was the *Ætas Lactea* with the Irish Prelates: the *Ætas Aurea* was not yet come.

St. Laurence, who at that time was Archbishop of Dublin, was a very religious man, according to the religion of those days. When he lay on his death-bed, being admonished to make his will, he replied; God knoweth that I have not a single penny ^s.

A. 1180. The Emperor Manuel Comnenus died, whilst he was occupied about a Theological controversy, which was terminated three months after. There was in the Catechism of the Greeks an Anathema against the God of Mahomet, who neither begetteth nor is begotten, but is *Holosphynos*, as if you should say, *solid*, or *all of a piece*; for so the Greeks rendered the Arabic word *Elfemed*, which is one of the names of God, according to the Mahometans. The Emperor called his

^s Fleury, xv. 474.

Bishops together, and proposed to strike out this Anathema, which scandalized such Mahometans as were else disposed towards Christianity, and could not bear to make use of curses pronounced against God, on any pretence whatsoever. The Bishops at first would not part with the Anathema, and rejected the Emperor's proposal. However, at length, with much reluctance, they consented to leave it out, and instead of it to say, Anathema to Mahomet, to his doctrines, and to his sect^h.

A. 1181. The Pope's Legate marched with a great army against the Albigen-
ses, whom he called Manichæans.

Lucius III. was elected Pope by the Cardinals, who now assumed that right to themselvesⁱ.

A. 1182. Philip of France hated the Jews, and suspected them to be guilty of crucifying Christian children, and of

^h Fleury, xv. 487.

ⁱ Ibid. 498.

other crimes; and therefore expelled them from his dominions.

“ I find not till now, says Fleury, accusations of this kind brought against the Jews; but afterwards they were frequent. The Jews affirmed that they were calumnies. But WHY should the Christians have forged them more at this time than at any other, if there had not been some foundation for them?”

There seems to be no great weight in Fleury's WHY. Many Christians of those times would not scruple to tell any lies, especially where Religion was concerned. Thus they confidently affirmed that miracles were wrought at the tombs of these crucified children.

Several heretics, called Manichæans, were burnt in Flanders.

The Greeks massacred all the Latins whom they found in Constantinople, except about four thousand, whom they sold for slaves to the Turks. The La-

tins repaid the Greeks in the same manner ^k.

A. 1185. The Sicilians took Theffalonica, and committed there all kind of cruelties, sacrileges and impieties. The Archbishop of that city was very serviceable to his flock in this grievous calamity. He was the learned Eustathius, well known by his Commentary on Homer. He might have retired before the siege, but he chose to stay with his people, to comfort them; and after the city was taken, he often visited the Counts who commanded the Sicilian troops, to soften them and excite them to compassion. They shewed him respect, arose to receive him, heard him patiently, and had some regard to his entreaties^l.

A. 1186. Some Livonians were converted, and a Church was founded in their country.

^k Fleury, xv. 506.

^l Ibid. 540. Cave, ii. 240.

The Templars, by their perfidies, perjuries, and ravages, provoked Saladin, who on that account waged war with the Christians, beat them at the battle of Tiberias, slew all the Templars that fell into his hands, took Jerusalem, and treated its inhabitants with much generosity and humanity. Thus Jerusalem fell into the hands of the Mahometans, after having been in those of the Latin Christians eighty eight years. And now the Latins had only Antioch, Tyre, and Tripoly left in their possession ^m.

A. 1188. A Croisade was undertaken, and the Pope's Legate went, as a sort of Generalissimo.

There was a massacre of the Jews in England, recorded by our Historians.

A. 1191. Celestin III. being made Pope, was seated in the *Stone Chair*, which was even then called *Stercoraria*, because it had a hole in the seat, resembling a Close-stool. But the hole is

^m Fleury, xv. 552.

small, and Antiquaries are of opinion that it had been a chair used in some bath, with an opening to let the water drain off.

This modest Pope crowned the Emperor Henry VI. and holding the imperial crown first between his feet, he kicked it to the floor, to shew that he had power to depose as well as to make Emperors^a.

“ In the cloister of St. John of Lateran, there are three chairs, one of white marble, and two of porphyry. The two latter are pierced, the first is not. They were called *Stercorariæ*, and they used to make the new Popes sit down in them, to fulfill the words of Scripture; *Suscitat de pulvere egenum, et de stercore erigit pauperem*. Mabillon thinks that they had at first been used in baths, and that the beauty of the marble caused them to be employed in this ceremony, and that being in the Porch of St. John of Lateran, they were called *Stercorariæ*, on account of the obscure and neglected place where they stood, and also

^a Fleury, xv. 600.

by way of allusion to the words of the Psalm which the Pope used to chant when he sat upon them. Others took them to be Close-stools, and on that account fit for the Pope to sit upon, when he said *de stercore*, &c. It is not known when this religious use of them commenced. No author hath spoken of it before the twelfth century, that is, according to Mabillon, an hundred years before mention was made of the story of Pope Joan, of which he supposes Martinus Polonus to have been the first relater. After which, it being reported that they used these chairs, to examine the sex of the new made Pope, the ceremony became so infamous that it was abolished °.”

“ There was a statute of Joan, whilst the story about her was believed, and it stood amongst those of the Popes in a Church of Siena. But, under the Pontificate of Clemens VIII, they altered the features of her face into those of a man, and put underneath it the

° Mabillon, Bibl. Univ. vii. 150.

name

name of Zacharias, thus transforming a *Pope's* into a *Pope* ^p."

Acre was taken by the Croisez; and the Order of Teutonic Knights was established ^q.

A. 1198. "Since the twelfth century, the Greeks sunk in ignorance, took it into their heads to erase the writings of old parchment manuscripts, and to write Ecclesiastical treatises in them; and thus, to the unspeakable detriment of the Republic of Letters, such authors as Polybius, Dio, Diodorus Siculus, and some others who are quite lost, were metamorphosed into Prayer-books and Homilies. After an exact search, I can affirm that of the Books written on parchment since that century, I have found the greater number to be such as had the first writing upon them scratched out. But as all these Copyists were not equally dextrous in effacing and cleaning these manuscripts, I have seen some in which a

^p Bibl. Univ. vii. 160.

^q Fleury, xv. 602.

part at least of the former writing might be read^r”.

Celestin III died, and Innocent III. was chosen in his room, being only thirty seven years of age: and here end the Annals of Baronius.

Some heretics, called Manichæans, and also the Waldenses, were persecuted in France.

The Order of the Holy Trinity, or of the Trinitarians, for the redemption of captives, was instituted, and was confirmed by the Pope^s.

The *Annales Ordinis SS. Trinitatis*, written by a Franciscan, abound with wonderful wonders wrought in support of the Order.

These were happy times, when miracles cost nothing besides the easy labour of inventing them. Were the Monks and Nuns destitute of food? They sat down to table, and Angels in the form of pretty girls brought them

^r Montfaucon, *Mém de l'Acad.* ix. 325.

^s Fleury, xiv. 16. Mosheim, p. 515. Bibl. Univ. ii. 1.

dishes of savoury meat. Did they want to go a voyage by sea? Ships were at hand, which spontaneously carried them to the desired harbour. Were they travelling by land, and did they want to sit down and rest themselves? Rocks were instantly turned into soft elbow-chairs. Was it time to say Mass? The bells tolled of their own accord, &c.

There was at Paris a Feast observed in the Cathedral, on the first of January, called *The Festival of Fools*, in which all sorts of absurdities and indecencies were committed. This holy-day was put down, or rather, was suspended only for a time; for it lasted still two hundred and forty years after.

The insolent Pope Innocent III, in a most saucy and impertinent letter, threatened to excommunicate the Emperor of Constantinople and all the Greek Church, if they would not submit to his supreme authority temporal and spiritual. What a blockhead was he,

he, to think that his excommunications would terrify the Greeks, already alienated from the Latins, and from the Popes !

He shewed favour to the Jews, forbidding to compel them to receive baptism, and to take their goods by violence, to disturb them in the celebration of their festivals, to exact from them new services, to deprive them of their burying-grounds, or to dig up their bodies †.

Mosheim † hath given a full and just account of the tyranny, usurpation, and wickedness of the Popes and their Legates in this century. The Princes endeavoured to restrain some of these encroachments, and Louis IX, called Saint Louis, secured, as far as the times would permit the privileges of the Gallican Church, by the *Pragmatic Sanction*.

† Fleury, xvi. 164

‡ P. 506.

A. 1199. Some heretics were hanged, some beheaded, and some burnt in Italy *.

In this century, in Germany, persons even of the highest rank, if they had behaved unfaithfully to the Emperor, were condemned, according to an old custom, to carry a dog about upon their shoulders; that this animal, who is a symbol of fidelity, might upbraid them for the want of it †.

“ So many things concurred to disgrace and corrupt religion, that it is matter of wonder to find even the slenderest traces of it remaining. The Roman Pontiffs would suffer nothing to be taught which opposed their insolent government, and required that religion should be modelled in such a form and manner, as to be subservient to that plan which their predecessors had contrived. Whosoever would not comply with their will, and presumed

* Fleury, xvi. 56.

† Speiser, *Hist. Germ.*

to prefer the holy Scriptures to their decrees, was immediately cut off by fire or sword. Then the Priests and Monks perceiving that it was their interest to keep the people in profound ignorance, amused them with frivolous and pompous ceremonies, and made piety to consist in silly rites, bodily macerations, and a profound veneration for the Sacred Order. The Scholastic Doctors considered the dictates of the Ancients, dressed up in a Logical form, as the only Sacred Truths, and instead of explaining the word of God, divided and subdivided religion into incoherent scraps. In opposition to them, the Mystics, excluding human liberty, ascribed all pious dispositions to a divine impulse, and instead of setting bounds to Reason, absolutely discarded it.

Hence an incredible superstition and ignorance supplied the place of religion amongst the people. They put their trust, not in prayers to God, and in the merits and intercession of Christ, but in Reliques, for the most part fictitious,
and

and at the best, uncertain. Whosoever could build a Church at his own expence, or largely contribute to repair and adorn it, was accounted an happy creature, and high in the favour of God. He who through poverty could not perform such exploits, submitted to the functions of a beast of burden, in carrying stones, and drawing a cart, for the use of a sacred edifice, and expected eternal life as a reward for these voluntary labours. Religious invocation was much more directed to the Saints and to the Court of heaven than to God or to our Saviour; and in those days no curious questions were started, as they were in later times, in what manner the Saints above could be supposed to hear and regard the supplications of men upon earth; for before the Scholastics had begun their subtle speculations upon this subject, it had been an old opinion, which the Christians borrowed from the Pagans, that celestial Spirits descended from their mansions, and delighted to be in the places

places which they had frequented when they dwelt here. If any Knave or Lunatic, male or female, boasted of divine revelations, they were received as the oracles of God; as it appears from the examples of two celebrated German Prophetesses, St. Hildegardis, and St. Elizabeth.

The Rulers of the Church took a mean advantage of the bigotry and stupidity of the people, to squeeze money out of them, and to enrich themselves; and every Religious Order had tricks of its own to carry on this pillaging trade. The Bishops, whenever they wanted large sums, either for pious, or for wicked uses, gave sinners leave to purchase at certain rates a remission of the punishment which they had incurred; that is, they granted Indulgences: and it is well known what great undertakings were accomplished in these ages by the profits arising from the Indulgences. The Abbots and the Monks, to whom it was not permitted to exercise this pri-

vilege, found out another device to get wealth. They used to carry about in solemn processions the carcases and reliques of the Saints from place to place; and whosoever wanted to see, or to handle, or to kiss these Rarities, was obliged to purchase this honour and felicity by an handsome present. As large a profit was sometimes made by this craft, as even by Episcopal Indulgences.

The Roman Pontiffs, perceiving how lucrative the grant of Indulgences was to the inferior Prelates, projected to restrain this Episcopal privilege within narrower bounds, and to take the trade into their own hands. They therefore granted not only common and public Indulgences, but perfect, absolute, and *plenary* remission of all temporal and finite pains and penalties, as often as the necessities of the Church, or their own interest required; nor did they only remit those penances and corrections which the Laws divine and human inflicted, but also those
which

which were to be undergone in the intermediate state of Purgatory; which was more than the Bishops had presumed to do. At first they exercised this prerogative sparingly, and only for the carrying on the holy Wars: but afterwards they granted such favours profusely, on various and lesser occasions, and for the sake of lucre. By the introduction of this new right, the ancient Canonical and Ecclesiastical Penitence fell to nothing; and the Penitential Canons and Directories being laid aside, an unbounded licence of sinning was allowed. And that the Papal usurpations might not want a proper support, a doctrine unheard of before was invented in this age, which in the following century was polished and perfected by Thomas Aquinas; namely, that there is an immense and inexhaustible treasure of works of Supererogation performed by the Saints; that the guardian and dispenser of this treasure is the Roman Pontiff; that out of this plenteous stock, he can transfer

260 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

and assign to every man such a portion as his spiritual wants may require, and as shall suffice to secure him from the punishment due to his offences. It is a deplorable thing that a device, so mean, so fordid, so infamous, and so noxious, should still be retained and defended.

The principal Professors of Theology dwelt at Paris, but divided into different Sects. The first sort were the *Theologi Veteres*, who adhered to the old Divinity, and established sacred doctrines on passages of the Scriptures, testimonies of the Fathers, and Decrees of Councils, and rarely added any thing of human Wisdom or Science. Such were Bernard and others. There was not a wide difference between these Doctors and those who were afterwards called *Positivi* and *Sententiarii*: for the latter supported their Theological tenets principally by the testimony of the Scriptures, and of the ancient Doctors; but yet they had recourse also to reasoning and to philosophy, especially

cially when difficulties were to be removed, and adversaries were to be confuted; and herein some were more cautious and moderate than others. The most eminent of these was Petrus Lombardus, whose four Books of *Sentences*, which were made public A. 1162, suddenly acquired such authority, that the Doctors took them as a Text, to be explained by their comments. At the same time another and a far bolder Sect of Teachers arose, who presumed to interpret the sacred doctrines by Logical terms and distinctions, and to reduce them to the rules of the Dialectic Art. The author of this method of teaching Divinity, which was afterwards called *Scholastic*, because it was generally adopted in the Schools, was Peter Abelard, a man of a most subtle genius; and great multitudes in France, in England, and in Italy, incited by his example, and desirous of acquiring the same honour, became his followers and imitators. By these studies the mild and peaceable religion

of Christ was suddenly turned into the Art of quibbling and wrangling. For these men illustrated and explained nothing, but obscured the clearest truths by distinctions and by subdivisions into scraps and fragments; wearied themselves and others with frivolous and abstruse questions; disputed both for and against the most important points; and because Logical terms were not to be found applicable to all parts of Religion, they had recourse to new ones, and ran into the most intricate and perplexing trifles^a. ”



*Discourse on Ecclesiastical History,
by Fleury.*

THEY who have perused with any attention my foregoing Volumes, have doubtless observed a wide difference between the Discipline of the first ten Centuries, and of those which followed. It was indeed much enfeebled in the tenth Century, but that was owing to ignorance, or to such transgressions as stood

^a Mosheim, p. 469.

condemned at the first view. Still it was acknowledged that the Canons and the ancient Tradition were to be followed. It is only since the twelfth century that they began to build upon new foundations, and to follow maxims unknown to Antiquity. But even then they thought to follow it, whilst they were departing from it. The evil came from an error in fact, from taking that to be ancient which was novel ; for in general it hath been always taught in the Church that it was necessary to adhere to the tradition of the first ages, for discipline as well as for doctrine. I have already spoken of the false *Decretals* ascribed to the Popes of the three first ages, which are found in the Collection of Isidorus, and which made their appearance at the end of the eighth century, and I have mentioned the proofs which demonstrate them to be spurious. Here is the source of all the evil : an ignorance of History and Criticism caused these Decretals to be received, and the new maxims contained

in them to be admitted as the doctrine of the purest Antiquity. A Presbyter of Constance, who wrote towards the end of the eleventh century, says, on the authority of these Decretals, that according to the discipline of the Apostles and their Successors, Bishops ought never or very rarely to be accused; and yet acknowledges that this discipline agrees not with the Nicene Council; and owning likewise that this Council forbade the translations of Bishops, he opposeth to it the authority of the Popes Evaristus, Callistus, and Anteros, more ancient than that Council, who permitted such translations.

After the Roman Church had groaned an hundred and fifty years together under many worthless Popes who profaned the holy See, God took pity on this primary Church, and gave her Leo IX, whose virtues have placed him among the Saints, and who had for Successors in the rest of the eleventh Century, and in the twelfth, several Popes virtuous, and zealous for the re-
establisht.

establishment of discipline, as Gregory VII, Urban II, Pascal II, Eugenius III, and Alexander III. But the most upright intentions destitute of knowledge produce great faults; and the faster one runs in the dark, the more frequent and dangerous are the falls. These great Popes, finding the authority of the Decretals so established that none ever thought to contest them, imagined themselves obliged in conscience to support the maxims therein contained as the pure discipline of the Apostolical times, and of the golden age of Christianity. But they did not discern that they contained many maxims directly contrary to those of venerable Antiquity.

In these false Decretals it is declared unlawful to hold a Council without the order, or at least the permission of the Pope. Have you seen any thing like this in the History, I say not of the three first ages of Christianity, but down to the ninth? I know that the authority of Popes was always necessary

ry for General Councils; and thus is to be understood the saying of the Historian Socrates, that there is a Canon forbidding the Churches to make any rule without the consent of the Bishop of Rome; and the remark of Sozomen, that the care of all the Churches belongs to him, on account of the dignity of his See. But as to Provincial and Ordinary Councils, the Roman Correctors of Gratian's Decree have acknowledged that the authority of the Pope is not necessary. In fact, is there the least trace of a permission or consent of the Pope in all the Councils mentioned by Tertullian, Cyprian, and Eusebius, either as to the celebration of Easter, or the re-admission of Penitents, or the baptism of Heretics? Was any mention made of the Pope in the three Great Councils of Alexandria, which were convened on the affair of Arius, before the Nicene Council? Was there any mention of him in the Council of Constantinople called by the Emperor Theodosius in 381? And yet Pope
Damascus

Damasus and all the West consented to its decisions ; infomuch that it is counted the Second Oecumenic Council. Not to mention so many national Councils held in France, principally under the Kings of the second race, and in Spain under the Gothic Kings. When the Nicene Fathers ordered that two Councils should be held annually in each Province, did they suppose that a message was to be sent to Rome to ask leave? How could such application be perpetually made from the extremities of Asia and of Africa? The holding of Provincial Councils was counted amongst the ordinary practices of Religion, just as the celebration of the Eucharist on Sundays. It was only the violence of persecutions which interrupted the course of it ; and as soon as the Bishops found themselves at liberty, they returned to it, as to the most efficacious way of keeping up proper discipline. Yet in consequence of this new maxim, scarcely were any Councils held after the twelfth Century, in which

268 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

which the Legates of the Pope did not preside; and then the custom of calling them together insensibly declined and was dropped.

In the Decretals it is said that the Bishops can be judged definitively by the Pope alone; and this maxim is frequently repeated. You have met with an hundred instances to the contrary. To mention only the more remarkable, Paul of Samosata, Bishop of Antioch, the first see of St. Peter, and the third city of the Roman Empire, was judged and deposed by the Bishops of the East and of the neighbouring Provinces, without the participation of the Pope, to whom they thought it sufficient to notify the thing after it was done, as it appears from their Synodical Letter; and the Pope made no complaint about it. Nothing is more frequent in the first nine ages than accusations and depositions of Bishops; but this was performed in Provincial Councils, the usual tribunals in all causes Ecclesiastical. He must be totally ignorant of the
History

History of the Church, who can imagine that no Bishop at any time, or in any place, could be judged, without sending him to Rome, or obtaining a commission from the Pope.

And indeed, without consulting facts, a small degree of common sense will shew that the thing was impracticable. As early as in the fourth Century, there was a prodigious number of Churches in Greece, in Asia, in Syria, in Ægypt, and in Afric, besides those in the Western world. Most of the Bishops were poor, and incapable of taking long journeys; and the Emperors used to defray their charges, when they came to General Councils. How was it possible to bring them up to Rome, and not them only, but their accusers, and the witnesses, men usually still poorer than they? Yet this is what the Author of the Decretals was obliged to suppose; and the absurdity of it appeared evidently when the Popes attempted to put it in practice. Gregory VII, for example, believing himself the sole compe-

tent judge over all the Bishops, used daily to summon them from the remotest parts of Germany, France, or England. They were obliged to quit their Churches for years together, to travel to Rome at vast expence, to go and defend themselves against accusers who often failed to appear. Delays after delays were obtained; the Pope gave Commissions for receiving informations at the place itself; and thus, after many voyages, and a tedious process, he pronounced a definitive sentence, against which appeals were made under the next Pontificate. Often the cited Bishop did not come to Rome, either on account of sickness, or of poverty, or of some other impediment, or because he knew himself to be guilty. And if the Pope deposed him, and appointed another in his place, he defended himself sword in hand. Of this you have seen examples; and such are the inconveniences of attempting what never was and never can be practicable.

True

True it is that on a few extraordinary occasions of a manifest oppression and a crying iniquity, the Bishops condemned by their Councils might have recourse to the Pope, as to the Superior over all Bishops, and the Conservator of the Canons; and such is the appointment of the Council of Sardica. But then it requires that the Pope, whether he appoints a Legate or no, shall have the cause judged at the place itself, since it is easy to impose upon a remote Judge. On this St. Cyprian insists, speaking of Basilides, a Spanish Bishop, who, being deposed in his own Province, had by disguising the truth obtained from Pope Stephen Letters commanding that he should be restored, to which the African Council paid no regard at all. And some years before this, the same Cyprian writing to Pope Cornelius concerning Fortunatus the Schismatic, useth these remarkable words;

“It is a settled rule amongst us, that every offender be examined in the place
where

where the offence was committed. It is not fit that they who are subject to our jurisdiction should run about here and there, to sow dissension amongst the Bishops. Let them plead the cause where accusers and witnesses are to be had."

Thus he speaks to the Pope himself, to whom Fortunatus had carried his complaints. After all, this recourse to the Pope permitted by the Council of Sardica related principally to extraordinary affairs, and to the Bishops of the most eminent Sees, such as Athanasius, Chrysostom, and Flavian of Constantinople, who had no other Superior to whom they could appeal.

The Decretals have also ascribed to the Pope alone the power of translating Bishops from one See to another. Yet the Council of Sardica and other Councils, which have most strictly forbidden all translations, have made no exceptions in favour of the Pope; and when in a few instances a translation was allowed, for the manifest service of the
Church,

Church, it was done by the authority of the Metropolitan and the Council of the Province. So far was the Pope from authorizing translations, that the Church of Rome was a most exact observer of the Canons which prohibited it. For nine hundred years we find no Bishop translated to the See of Rome. Formosus was the first; and this was made one of the pretexts for digging up his body after his death. But since the Decretals obtained force, translations were frequent in the West, where they had before been unknown, and the Popes only condemned them when they were practised without their authority; as it appears from the Letters of Innocent III.

The same may be observed concerning the erection of new Sees. According to the Decretals, this belongs to the Pope alone; but according to the ancient Discipline it belonged to the Council of the Province, and there is an express Canon for it in the African Councils. And certainly, to consider only

the advancement of religion and the public utility, it was far more reasonable to refer it to the Bishops of the country, to judge what cities stood in need of new Bishopricks, and to chuse proper persons to fill them, than to refer it to a Pope residing so far off, and so incapable of forming a right judgment. In vain are his Commissaries appointed to inquire into these things: such procedures are not to be compared with ocular inspection and experimental knowledge. Accordingly, when St. Augustin erected a new See in his own country, he sent not to Rome about it, he only consulted the Primate of Numidia; and if the Pope was acquainted with it, it was only on occasion of the personal faults of Antony the appointed Bishop; and he made no complaint that the See had been erected without his participation. St. Remigius had not recourse to the Pope, when he erected the Bishoprick of Laon: he did it, says Hincmar, by the authority of the African Council, that is, of the Canon which we have

have mentioned. And the reason is, that the Decretals which invest the Pope with this privilege were not as yet fabricated.

As to the consolidation or suppression of Bishopricks, I see no other grounds to attribute them to the Pope alone, except some procedures of St. Gregory reported by Gratian. But Gratian did not discern that Gregory acted thus only in the Southern parts of Italy, of which Rome was the Metropolis, or in Sicily, and other islands, which depended particularly on the holy See.

In the first ages, Metropolitan cities were few, in proportion to the number of Bishopricks, that the Councils might consist of the more members; for the principal function of the Metropolitans was to preside in them. But after the Popes possessed the power of appointing them, they created a great number, chiefly in Italy, without any occasion for it, and purely to shew honour to certain cities. The Nicene Council, which doubtless had a right to grant

new prerogatives of this kind, says simply that the privileges of Churches shall be preserved to them, according to ancient custom; which shews that the distinction of Metropolitan and Patriarchal Churches was already settled by long possession. The Popes since the eleventh century have not only made Metropolitans, but Patriarchs, and Primates, all upon the authority of the Decretals; namely, of the first Letter attributed to St. Clemens, and of the second and third of Pope Anaclet, wherein it is said that the Apostles and their Successors established Patriarchs and Primates in those cities, where the temporal Government had placed the principal Magistrates, and where the Pagans had their *Archiflamines*, a barbarous word, which is to be found only in the Decretals. You have seen that in the first ages even the title of Archbishop was unknown: they were called only Bishops of Rome and of Alexandria, as well as of the smallest city; and the Bishops in their letters treated each

each other as brethren, with a perfect equality, as it appears from the Inscriptions of the Letters of Cyprian. As charity declined, titles and ceremonies increased. The Bishop of Alexandria, as it is supposed, was the first who took the name of Archbishop; the Bishop of Antioch that of Patriarch; and the name of Primate was peculiar to Africa. But this was more than the Forger of the Decretals knew; and he hath not mentioned the title of Exarch, so famous in Asia.

Yet it was upon the credit of this Author that Gregory VII. established, or rather confirmed the Primacy of Lyon, since in his Bull he cites the words of the Decretal of Anaclet. On the same foundation other Popes have presumed to erect so many Primacies in France, in Spain, and elsewhere; supposing them to have been ancient, by an error in fact. These new establishments being contrary to ancient possessions have produced most violent contests. You have seen with what vigour

278 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

the French Prelates rejected the Primacy which John VIII. gave to the Archbishop of Sens: you have seen how they afterwards opposed that of Lyon, which long possession hath at last established; and how the Bishops of Spain opposed that of Toledo, and of Brague, which have never been well authorized. We must not then imagine that a Bull given without knowledge of the cause, like that of Callistus II. for the Primacy of Vienne, sufficeth to overturn at once the ancient state of Churches, in defiance to the parties concerned.

One of the deepest wounds that the Decretals gave to Ecclesiastical Discipline, was the boundless extending of the appeals to the Pope. It appears that the Forger had this article greatly at heart, by the care that he hath taken to spread quite through his work the maxim that not only every Bishop, but every Priest, and in general every person who finds himself aggrieved, may upon every occasion appeal directly to the

the Pope. He introduceth no less than nine Popes confirming this doctrine, Anaclet, Sixtus I. and II. Fabian, Cornelius, Victor, Zephyrinus, Marcellus, and Julius. Yet St. Cyprian, who lived in the time of Fabian, and Cornelius, not only opposed such appeals, but gave solid reasons for his opposition; and in the time of St. Augustin, the African Church did not as yet permit them, as it appears from a Letter of a ^b Council to Pope Cælestinus. Lastly, until the ninth century, we find few examples of these appeals, by virtue of the Council of Sardica, unless, as I said before, by some Bishops of eminent Sees, who had no other superior than the Pope.

But after the Decretals got into vogue, appeals were perpetual throughout the Latin Church. Hincmar, better skilled than others in the knowledge of the ancient discipline, vigorously opposed this innovation maintaining that the remedy ought, at the farthest, to be granted only to Bishops, and not to

^b A. 426.

Priests. You have seen afterwards the complaints of Ivo and of St. Bernard against this abuse, which in their days was got to the height. They shewed that the liberty of appealing to the Pope, in all matters, entirely enervated the old discipline; that wicked Priests and other refractory sinners had by it a sure way to elude, or at least to delay correction; that the Pope was often ill-informed, and obliged to retract the judgments which he had rashly pronounced; lastly, that the Prelates wearied out with the length of vexatious procedures, the expence and the fatigue of voyages, and many other difficulties, desponded and connived at disorders which they could not rectify. Even the Popes found themselves at last incommoded by this liberty of appealing to them, which often retarded the execution of their own orders; and thence arose the clause, *Notwithstanding all appeals*; which became the style of their Bulls. If St. Bernard exerted himself with such vigour against this abuse, whilst

whilst he yet supposed that the doctrine of Appeals must be admitted, what would he have said, if he had known that it was a mere innovation founded upon forged records? How much more strongly would he have inveighed against that multiplicity of affairs with which the Popes were encumbered and oppressed? He knew that, according to the Evangelical maxims, a Bishop and a successor of the Apostles ought to be disengaged from things temporal, to attend to prayer and to the instruction of his flock. But the tyranny of Custom restrained him, and for want of a knowledge of Antiquity, and of the steps by which the Popes had been led into this busy situation, he did not dare to speak out roundly, and advise Eugenius to return to the simplicity of the first ages. And yet the description which Bernard hath given us of the Court of Rome shews how this imaginary right, founded on the Decretals, had hurt the holy See, under the pretence of extending its jurisdiction. For he represents the
Consistory

Consistory of the Cardinals as a Parliament, and a sovereign tribunal, occupied in judging causes from morning to night, and the Pope, who presided, as so encumbered with affairs, that he had scarcely breathing-time. The Court was full of Solicitors, Pleaders, Counsellors, self-interested, passionate, disingenuous men, seeking only to over-reach their antagonists, and to grow rich by fleecing others. The same idea is suggested to us by the history of the Popes of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, and by their Letters, particularly those of Innocent III. which contain an astonishing detail of the affairs of all Christendom. These letters alone must have been an immense occupation: for though the Pope might not have been the composer of them himself, he must have had an account of their contents laid before him, and have taken cognizance at least of the more important causes. And how shall a Pope so occupied find time for prayer, for studying the Scriptures, for preaching, for
other

other essential duties of Episcopacy? I speak not now of the cares resulting from his own dominions, as he was a temporal Prince: I shall consider them hereafter.

I see plainly that by thus extending the authority of the Pope, they thought to procure him signal advantages, and make his Primacy more important. They must then have been absolute strangers to Ecclesiastical History, or they must have supposed that the most eminent Popes, as St. Leo and St. Gregory, neglected their rights, and suffered their dignity to be debased: for it is a matter of fact that they never exercised the authority set forth in the Decretals. Let us enter a little farther into this subject. These Popes, had they not good reason for acting as they did? Had they not sublimer thoughts, and a more perfect knowledge of religion, than Gregory VII, and Innocent III? Vulgar minds seek only their own interest: philosophical minds, extending their views much farther, discern
by

284 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

by the mere light of Nature and Reason, that in every society the interest of individuals, and even of the Rulers, ought to yield to the interest of the Community. Surely it is unlawful to imagine that Jesus Christ should establish his Church upon maxims less pure and noble than those of Pagan Philosophers: and indeed to those who faithfully govern his flock he hath promised no temporal emoluments, but only an eternal reward proportionable to their charity. Let us then frankly acknowledge that the Popes of the five or six first ages had reason to consider the utility of the Catholic Church preferably to any apparent advantage to their own persons, or to their own See. Let us own that the interest of the Church required that all affairs should be judged upon the spot by those who could settle them with more knowledge and facility; that the Bishops, and particularly their Head, should be diverted as little as possible from their spiritual and essential functions; and that each
of

of them should remain settled in the Church where God's providence had placed him, ever applying himself to instruct and sanctify his people. To these solid blessings can any one pretend to compare the melancholy advantage of making a Pope formidable all the world over, and of attracting to Rome a croud of Bishops and Clergymen from every quarter, some through the fear of censures, others by the hope of favours.

I am sensible that this resort of Prelates, and of other strangers, whom various interests drew to Rome, brought thither great riches, and that the people of that city grew fat at the expence of the rest of the world; but I am ashamed to mention a profit of this kind, where Christianity is concerned. Was the Pope established at Rome to enrich it, or to sanctify it? and St. Gregory, did he not perform the office of a common Parent, when he poured out so liberally, by his alms extended through all the provinces, the immense revenues of

7

the

the Roman Church? But the Popes who enriched Rome did not sanctify Rome; they seemed to have even despaired of the possibility of it, according to the hideous portrait which St. Bernard draws of the Romans of his time. Yet it was the first duty of the Pope, as of their Bishop, to labour their conversion, and he was much more obliged to this, than to sit in judgment upon so many foreign causes.

Gratian's^c Decree gave the finishing stroke to establish the authority of the Decretals, which are cited and dispersed throughout his book. For more than three Centuries no other Canons were known than those contained in this Compilation, and no other were followed in the Schools, and in the Tribunals. Gratian had gone even beyond the Decretals in stretching the Pope's power, maintaining that he was not subject to the Canons, which he says of his own head,

^c See Cave, ii. 215.

without proof or voucher. Thus arose in the Latin Church a confused notion that the Papal power had no bounds; and from this principle, taken for granted, many consequences have been deduced beyond the articles precisely expressed in the Decretals; and the new Theologers have not sufficiently distinguished these maxims from the essentials of the Catholic faith, concerning the primacy of the Pope, and the ancient Rules of discipline.

Besides the things which regard the Pope, Gratian hath inserted in his Decree new maxims respecting the immunities of the Clergy, affirming that they cannot be judged by Laymen, in any case whatsoever; to prove which he cites many passages from the Decretals, and a pretended Law of Theodosius adopted by Charlemain, to stretch beyond measure the jurisdiction of Bishops. To this he adds a curtailed paragraph from one of the *Novellæ* of Justinian, which, if the whole had been produced, would have proved

proved directly the contrary. Yet this Imperial Constitution, thus mangled, was the principal pretext, on which St. Thomas of Canterbury (Becket) resisted the King of England with that firmness which brought upon him first persecution, and then martyrdom. The maxim was false in fact ; but it passed for true amongst the most eminent Casuists.

These instances are sensible proofs of the importance of *Criticism*, which speculative and indolent Scholastics treat with contempt, as a childish amusement and a vain curiosity. To learn diverse languages so as to know them accurately ; to weigh every word so as to find out its proper signification, and even its etymology ; to observe the diversity of Styles in the same language, according to times and places ; to examine the histories of each nation, trusting only to originals ; to read them with an attention principally to morals ; to join to this the study of Geography and of Chronology ; these are the foundations

foundations of Criticism. It is, I confess, a work long and laborious, but necessary in order to ascertain the truth of facts. Facts are not to be discovered by mere syllogizing; and yet on these facts often depends the conduct of life. You have seen what inconveniences arose from a belief of forged Records. Thence came a facility of receiving all sorts of narrations, for want of proper rules to distinguish them; thence so many fabulous Legends, so many false miracles, so many frivolous visions, and idle reports; as we see, not to mention any more, in the Dialogues of Cæsarius the Monk.

The maxims contained in Gratian concerning the immunities of the Clergy are the ground of an answer given by Innocent III. at the beginning of his Pontificate, to the Emperor of Constantinople, whence hath been extracted a famous Decretal. In this Letter the Pope gives forced interpretations to a passage of St. Peter which was alleged by the Emperor to prove that all

Christians without exception ought to be subject to the temporal Powers. The Apostle, says the Pope, spake thus, to excite the Faithful to humility. The King indeed is sovereign, but only over those who receive from him things temporal, that is to say, over the Laity. As if the Church had not received all her temporalities from the Secular Power! The Pope adds, that the Prince hath not received the power of the sword over all evil-doers, but only over those who, using the sword themselves, are subject to his jurisdiction. By this he means only Laymen, that so he might procure for criminal Clergymen an exemption from temporal punishment, or an Immunity. He says that no one ought to judge another's servant, supposing that the Clergy are not servants to the Prince. Then he produces the Allegory of the two great Lights which God hath placed in heaven, to represent, says he, the two great Dignities, the Pontifical and the Regal. As if in a serious debate it were allowable to advance allegorical whimsies, to
deny

deny which is to confute them! Thus they eluded the plainest authorities of the holy Scriptures, to support prejudices drawn from the Decretals.

Now Innocent could not have addressed himself to a worse person for his purpose, than to a Greek Emperor, when he advanced these maxims unknown to Antiquity. The Latin Princes, for the most part so ignorant that they could not even read, took for granted upon these points all that was told them by the Clergy, who were their Counsellors; and these Clerks had all studied in the same schools, and drawn from the same source, from the Decree of Gratian: Amongst the Greeks all men of any rank, both Clergy and Laity, were men of letters: they consulted original records, the Scriptures, the Fathers, and the ancient Councils. They knew nothing of the spurious Decretals, coined in the West, and written in Latin. Accordingly, they had preserved the old discipline in all the points which I have marked out.

You have seen that all their Bishops, and even their Patriarchs, were judged and often deposed in their Councils, and that they did not ask leave of the Pope to assemble, and that there lay no appeal to him from their decisions. They did not apply to him for the translations of Bishops, or for the erection of new Sees; they followed the Canons contained in the ancient Code of the Greek Church. I say not that this Church was clear of all abuses; I have pointed out several on diverse occasions; and I know that the Patriarchs of Constantinople, by the favour of the Emperors, had claimed an exorbitant authority, and had encroached much on the Ecclesiastical power: but still the old formalities were externally kept up, and the Canons were known and revered.

You will say perhaps; It is no wonder that the Greeks did not address themselves to the Pope, either for appeals, or for any thing else, since from the time of Photius they did not acknowledge him as Head of the Church.

But

But did they appeal to him before? And even in the times when they were most united with the Roman Church, did they observe any part of that which I now call the new Discipline? Not they indeed; since even the Latins did not observe it, and these regulations were unknown to the whole Church. And here it may be remarked, by the way, that the Schism of the Greeks is not so ancient as it is commonly believed. I will clear up this in another Discourse. In the mean time let me just mention that it was hardly formed before the taking of Constantinople by the Latins. Besides, I see not that in the disputes which we have had with the Greeks since the time of Leo IX. and of Michael Cerularius, we have reproached them for holding Councils without the permission of the Pope, and for other points which we have been discussing. Nor do I find that Gregory VII. and his successors, ever cited the Greek Bishops to Rome, and treated them as they did the Latins.

They knew well enough that such commands would not have been regarded.

Leo IX. and the Popes who undertook to repair the ruins of the tenth century, and to restore the Roman Church to its lustre, laboured also to re-establish its temporal power, which they founded first on the Donation of Constantine, and then on those of Pepin, Charlemain, Louis the Debonaire, and Otho. All the world knows now what the Donation of Constantine is, and the falshood of it is even more generally acknowledged than that of the Decretals. But in the days of those Popes its genuineness was not called in doubt. St. Bernard took it for granted, when he told Eugenius that he was not only the Successor of St. Peter, but of Constantine. It was known and received even in the ninth century, and it was not till the middle of the fifteenth that the forgery began to be discerned. Even the Greeks admitted it, as it appears from Theodorus Balsamon, who cites it all, and pretends to ground upon it

it the prerogatives of the See of Constantinople.

Gothofred of Viterbo, in his abridged History dedicated to Urban III. speaking of Constantine's Donation, says that in the opinion of many persons, the Church had been more holy in the three first ages, but more happy in the following times. Whosoever was the author of this fine sentence, he had very mean and sordid sentiments, and far beneath not only the Gospel of Jesus Christ, but even human Philosophy, a small share of which might teach a man that the happiness of life consisteth in virtue, and not in wealth. But one who pretends to be a Christian cannot form a doubt of it. Jesus Christ hath explained himself sufficiently on this subject by his doctrine and by his example; since, being Lord of all worldly possessions, he supremely despised them, and bequeathed, as a portion to his disciples, poverty and sufferings. I return then again to the

question, whether discoveries were made in the eleventh century of a wisdom unknown before, and whether Leo IX. and Gregory VII. were more illuminated than St. Leo and St. Gregory.

These eminent Pontiffs had not searched their Archives enough to find in them the Donation of Constantine. They were neither Sovereign Princes, nor temporal Lords; and yet they did not complain that their power was too much cramped. They had no superfluous time upon their hands, after the performance of their spiritual duty. They were persuaded of the distinction between the two Powers, which Pope Gelasius hath well set forth, when he says that even Emperors were subject to Bishops in the Religious Order, and that in the Political Order the Bishops, not excepting the possessor of the first See, were obliged to obey the Laws of the Emperors.

Not that it is unlawful for Ecclesiastics, as well as for Laics, to possess things

things temporal. You have seen that in the earliest ages, under Pagan Emperors, the Churches had their Immoveables, and their Bishops had a property in all kind of goods, and even in slaves. Hence it follows that they might also possess Seignories, when, by the weakness of Sovereigns, and a defect in Politics, Jurisdictions became patrimonial, and the Public Power a property of particulars. For under the Roman Empire nothing of this kind was known, and there was no Lord, except the Sovereign. But after Lordships were annexed to certain lands, they who gave such lands to the Church, gave the Seignories also; and so Bishops became Counts, Dukes, and Princes, as they are still in Germany. And thus, directly against the primitive institution, even Monks, whose humility had placed them the lowest of mankind, had their subjects and their vassals; and their Abbots acquired the rank of Lords and Princes. All these rights are indeed legal; nor ought they
to

to be contested more with the Church than with the State ; and to return to the Roman Church, it would be unjust to dispute her Sovereignty of Rome, and of a great part of Italy, which she hath possessed for so many ages, since most of the Sovereign Princes have no better title to produce than a long possession.

There was reason therefore to condemn Arnould of Bresse, who stirred up the Romans to rebell against the Pope, maintaining in general that it was not lawful for the Clergy to possess lordships, lands, or immoveables, and that they ought to subsist upon alms and voluntary oblations. Yet I confess I could wish to have found in Authors contemporary with Arnould the arguments by which they refuted his errors. For the two Letters of St. Bernard to the Romans upon this subject are pathetic declamations, supported by no proofs, and taking it for granted that the Pope's right was incontestable. And

as we observed before, he had no doubts concerning the Donation of Constantine. This deed, being received as a true one, established the fact, and the particular rights of the Pope; and as to the rights of the Clergy in general, they were valid, as I have shewed.

But they ought to have called to mind the maxim of the Apostle, that, What is lawful is not always expedient, and that the powers of the human mind are too limited to suffice at the same time for the exercise of temporal and of spiritual authority. At least, they ought to have respected the conduct of the Ancients, and to have supposed that if Constantine's Donation was real, St. Leo and St. Gregory must needs have known it, and must in that case have declined the use of it, for prudential reasons. The experience of more than six hundred ages hath shewed that their conduct was wise. Bishops, who are no more than Bishops, are in less danger of being involved in contentions with the Secular Power, which hath been continually struggling with Lords-Bishops.

In

300 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

In the opinion of holy Prelates, even the administration of temporal possessions was too heavy a burden. St. Chrysostom complained of it; and St. Ambrose delivered up the management even of his own patrimony to his brother Satyrus.

When the Church made it a rule to admit none to holy Orders except such as embraced a state of continence, she had not only a respect to the purity becoming those who were continually employed about things sacred, but was desirous that her principal Ministers should be disengaged from the cares which a married state unavoidably brings on, and which makes St. Paul say that he who is married is divided between God and the World. Now what is the care of one family compared with the care of a kingdom? or the conducting of a wife and children and of a few domestics, with the government of an hundred thousand subjects?

We are more affected with sensible than with spiritual objects. A Sovereign

reign is occupied in repressing crimes, and preventing seditions and conspiracies against his person and his estate. He labours to defend and preserve it against foreign enemies, and to seize upon opportunities to aggrandize it. For this purpose he must raise and maintain troops, fortify places of defence, and amass treasures to defray so many expences, correspond with neighbouring Princes, negotiate, make treaties of commerce and alliance. To a Politician these appear most serious and important affairs. Ecclesiastical functions, in comparison with these, seem to him mere trifles and child's play. To sing in a Church, to walk in a procession, to practise ceremonies, to make a Catechism, are in his sight vulgar occupations of which any one and every one is capable. The important and the solid point is to maintain his own power, and to weaken that of his enemies. Prayer, reading, meditating upon the Scriptures, are in his opinion fitter for a Monk than a Statesman. He hath

no

no leifure time for fuch employments. You have feen how much St. Bernard feared for Pope Eugenius, left the burden of worldly affairs fhould hinder him from making neceffary reflections upon himfelf and his duties, and lead him at laft into an hardened ftate of mind.

Perhaps you may imagine that a Princely Prelate will referve for himfelf the fpiritual functions, and leave the care of the State to fome Layman. No. That he will not do, by any means, left he fhould make this layman the real Prince. He will chufe to turn over his Spirituals to others; for he is not afraid of a Priest, a Vicar General, a Suffragan Bifhop. To them he will confent to transfer the ftudy of Divinity and of the Canons, the office of preaching, the care of fouls, contenting himfelf with a general account of thefe matters laid before him. But he will enter into the moft accurate detail of his troops, his fortifications, and his finances; or he will employ for that purpofe fome of his Ecclefiaftics in whom

whom he can better confide than in Laymen; and these Deputies will be in outward appearance Clergymen, in reality Statesmen. If you doubt of these assertions, look how the Diöceses and Dominions of powerful Prelates in Germany and Poland are governed, and you will see by experience that the ancient Christians were the wise men, and that this alliance of temporals and spirituals is never advantageous either to the Church or to the State.

As to Religion, most evidently it is better kept up by Bishops who are only Bishops, and entirely occupied in things spiritual, such as St. Ambrose and St. Augustin. They usually presided at the assemblies of the Faithful, and offered up the holy Sacrifice, to which they joined their exhortations and instructions; they were the Preachers and the Divines of their own Church. The word of God had quite another effect, coming from their mouth, and supported by their authority and their virtues, than in that of mere Priests, often
strangers

strangers or mercenaries. Theology was handled more seriously and nobly by such Prelates so employed, than by idle Doctors, who fought only to start subtleties, and refine upon one another in frivolous speculations and new questions. The ancient Fathers of the Church entered only into Theological disputes, as new errors sprang up which they were obliged to refute; but they went into a particular detail in points relating to the instruction of the Catechumens, the conversion of sinners, and the conduct of penitents. They were also the charitable arbitrators and mediators of peace between all Christians who were at variance; and to them every one applied, for counsel and assistance, who was ambitious to make a progress in piety; as we learn from their Letters. It is true that nothing was to be expected from these holy Bishops besides spiritual blessings; they made no man's fortunes in this world; and this was a singular advantage to religion. Wisely our Lord,

who was Wisdom itself, chose to be born poor, and to be destitute of all the possessions which are the objects of covetousness. His Disciples were allured and attached to him only by the force of Truth, and by the love of Virtue. He wanted to have servants like himself, attracted by no other motives than the desire of becoming better men, and the hope of eternal life. Whosoever imagines that things temporal, of whatsoever kind they be, riches, honours, power, and the favour of the Great are proper methods to establish religion, he is quite mistaken, I affirm it boldly, and he hath not in him the spirit of the Gospel. The reason is evident. If you preach the Gospel, and have riches and honours to distribute, you cannot discern by what motive you are followed and regarded, whether that of gain, or that of godliness; you run the risque of attracting hypocrites, or rather it is almost certain that you will attract none besides such, since the bulk of men is only affected with temporal profit.

Say not that it is good to join the spiritual and the temporal together, and so to allure by all sorts of inducements men whose weakness is well known. Jesus Christ knew their weak side better than we, and yet never employed such methods. It is all an illusion of self-love; and the Ministers of the Gospel are glad in the mean time themselves to enjoy that wealth and those honours which they pretend to employ as means to gain and to save souls.

Let us return to the Bishops, and conclude that it was gross and coarse ignorance which made them imagine that Seignories added to their Sees were useful means for the support of religion. I know of no See, except that of Rome, which admits a peculiar plea for the union of the two Powers. As long as the Roman Empire subsisted, it contained in its vast extent almost all Christendom: but since Europe hath been divided amongst many independent Princes, if the Pope had been subject to one of them, it might have been feared

feared that the rest would not have been disposed to acknowledge him as a common father, and that schisms would have been frequent. It may therefore be thought that by a particular Providence the Pope became independent, and Lord of a State so powerful as not to be easily oppressed by other Sovereigns; that so he might be more at liberty in the exercise of his spiritual power, and better able to keep all the Bishops in order. This is the notion of a great ^d Prelate in our days.

But in general, if the union of the two Powers can be profitable for religious purposes, it ought to have conducted to establish and support those good morals which are the genuine fruits of Christian doctrine. For Jesus Christ did not only come to instruct us in speculative truths; he came, as St. Paul says, to purify to himself a people acceptable, and zealous of good works. If this be the aim of true political wis-

^d Whom I should guess to be Bossuet. It looks like one of his refinements.

308 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

dom, and the first duty of Christian Princes, much more should it be so of Ecclesiastics, whose very profession is to sanctify others. Let those who have travelled in the dominions of Ecclesiastical Princes tell us how the case is, whether fewer horrible crimes and scandalous vices are committed there, whether the high-ways are less infested with robbers, whether more honesty and veracity is found in trade and commerce, in a word, whether the subjects of these Prelates distinguish themselves from those of Secular Rulers by the purity of their morals.

I never yet heard it said that the dominions of Ecclesiastics are happier than other kingdoms even in things temporal. On the contrary, as these Princes are not warriors by profession, their subjects are often more exposed to the insults of foreign enemies. As those dominions are not hereditary, the relations and the creatures of the Prince are only attentive to enrich themselves, and that at the expence of the people.
They

They have no views of serving the public by augmenting the number of the inhabitants, cultivating the lands, favouring honest industry, facilitating commerce, encouraging arts and sciences, inviting and importing all that conduceth to secure plenty and the conveniences of life. These extensive views are more suitable to Republics, or to kingdoms where Princes have a regard for their own posterity.

Amongst the Greeks we find no Lords-Prelates, because, notwithstanding the weakness and declension of their Empire, they ever preserved the Roman Laws, and the maxims of wiser Antiquity, according to which all the public power was vested in the Sovereign, and was never communicated to the subject, except in Magistracies and Offices which were not held as a property. Accordingly, the Greeks were much scandalized when they saw our Bishops possessing Seignories, bearing arms, raising troops, and heading them.

One of them said that the Pope was not a Bishop, but an Emperor.

What we have observed of Greek Bishops is also to be understood of Syrian and other Eastern Prelates, even before they fell under the dominion of the Mahometans; for since that calamitous time they have been more Slaves than Lords.

The spiritual dominion of the Pope being thus extended by consequences drawn from the Decretals, he was obliged to commit his power to Delegates, it being impossible for him either to go all over the world, or to bring all the world to him. Thence came the Legations so frequent since the eleventh century. Now these Legates were of two sorts, either Bishops and Abbots of the country itself, or Cardinals sent from the Court of Rome. The Legates also of the country were of two sorts, the one constituted by a particular commission from the Pope, the others such as by the prerogative annex-
ed

ed to their See; and these were called Legates born, *Legati nati*, as the Archbishops of Mentz, and of Canterbury. The Legates who came from Rome were called Legates *à latere*, to shew that the Pope had sent them from his own person; and the expression was taken from the Council of Sardica.

The Legates born did unwillingly suffer that the Pope should commission others, to the prejudice of their privileges: but the Pope placed more confidence in those of his own appointing, than in Prelates whom he knew not, or who did not suit his purposes. Now amongst those whom he chose, the most acceptable to the country were they who dwelt upon the spot, because they were more capable of judging and determining affairs than strangers from remote places. You may have observed with what pressing solicitations Ivo of Chartres entreated the Popes not to send those foreign Legates. None such were received either in England or in France, unless the King himself had

asked for them ; and the Bishops could not bear to see foreign Bishops come and preside over them, and much less Cardinals-Priests, or Deacons : for till then all Bishops had rank above those Cardinals who were not Prelates.

But what rendered the Legates *à latere* still more odious, was their pride, luxury, and avarice. They travelled neither at their own expence, nor at the Pope's, but at that of the country whither they were sent. They travelled with a great equipage, at least of twenty five horses ; for to this number the Third Council of Lateran had reduced them. Wheresoever they passed, they were to be magnificently defrayed by the Bishops and the Abbots ; inso-much that the Monasteries were sometimes reduced to sell the plate of their Churches, to answer the demands of the Legates. You may have observed what complaints were made about it. That was not all yet : presents were to be made to them ; they received gifts from the Princes to whom they were

were sent, and from the Parties who had causes before them; and nothing was ever expedited *gratis*. In a word these Legations were golden mines for the Cardinals, who used to return home loaded with cash. You have seen what St. Bernard says upon this subject, and with what admiration he speaks of a disinterested Legate.

The usual end of the Legation was a Council, which the Legate called at such times and places as he thought proper. There he presided, and decided the affairs in hand, with the approbation of the Bishops, whose only business was to applaud; for no great deliberation was used. Thus insensibly were abolished the Provincial Councils, which, according to the Canons, every Metropolitan was to hold every year. The dignity of Archbishops obscured by that of the Legates dwindled into mere titles and ceremonies, such as to have a Pall to wear, and a Cross to be carried before them, But they lost all authority over their suffragans, and no other

other Councils were to be seen but those of the Legates. And by the way, these frequent Legations seem to have given rise to the distinguished rank which the Cardinals of the Church of Rome have since held. For every Church had its own Cardinals, that is, its own Priests and Deacons, with certain Titles annexed. But when in these Councils Cardinal-Legates were seen taking place of Bishops, Archbishops, Primates, and Patriarchs, by degrees people were accustomed to annex to the title of Cardinal the idea of a dignity inferior only to that of the Pope. The dress of the Cardinals, when they appeared in pomp, confirmed this notion. The Cope and the Hat were a travelling dress, which suited the Pope's Embassadors; and *red* was the colour affected by the Pope; and to represent him the better, the Legates wore it, according to the remark of a Greek Historian.

* His Holiness should rather have chosen some other colour than that of the *Great Red Dragon*, and of the *Where arraigned in scarlet.* Revelat. xii. 3. xvii. 4.

Yet

Yet hence arose one of the greatest changes which the discipline of the Church underwent, namely the cessation of Provincial Councils, and the diminution of the authority of the Metropolitans. Was it fit that this decent order, so well established from the beginning of the Church, and so usefully observed for eight or ten centuries, should be banished and overset without deliberation, without examination, without knowledge of the cause? But in truth, what imaginable reason could be assigned for the change? Legates who were strangers, who knew not the language or the manners of the country, who were sojourners there for a few days, could they be more proper than the ordinary pastors to judge of disputes, and to re-establish discipline? Supposing them to have made excellent regulations in a Council, could they be assured that such orders would be obeyed if the Bishops did not lend an helping hand? Conclude we then upon this article, as upon the rest,

rest, that the ancient Discipline was not exchanged for a better. And in fact we do not find that these frequent Legations proved of any advantage to Religion.

The Bishops and Metropolitans were so ignorant of their own rights, that they greedily sought after Legatine powers; never considering how much better was an authority, if lesser yet inherent and independent, than one more extensive but borrowed and precarious. It seemed as though they could do nothing of themselves, unless the Pope supported them; and he on his part was very ready to grant them favours of which they stood not in need, and which always augmented his jurisdiction. The same holds true proportionably of the frequent practice of those days to get the Pope to confirm conventions made between Churches, and profitable donations bestowed upon them; as if these acts were the less valid unless he confirmed them. By granting favours which the suiter had

no occasion to ask, new claims are seized by the giver, and a pretence that his consent is necessary.

The Popes were often obliged to depart from Rome since the eleventh century, either by the revolts of the Romans who could not be brought to acknowledge them as Sovereigns; or by the Schisms of the Antipopes. They resided in neighbouring cities, as in Orvieto, Viterbo, and Anagni; and their court followed them; which it is necessary to observe, that we may not confound the city and the court of Rome. I find not that before this time the word *Court* was made use of, to signify the retinue of a Pope, or of a Bishop. The expression would have been thought too secular, and profane. Sometimes the Popes could not reside even in Italy; and then they took refuge in France, as did Innocent II. and Alexander III. for the persecuted Popes were no where safer than in France. And as in this kind of exile they enjoyed not their revenues, they were obliged to subsist
by

318 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

by the liberality of Princes, and by the voluntary contributions of the Clergy. This may be collected from a Sermon of Arnoul of Lisieux at the opening of the Council of Tours. Thus began the subsidies which the Popes often demanded afterwards of the Princes, or of Churches, either to enable them to go to war, or for other occasions. How different was this conduct from that of St. Gregory, who so liberally bestowed his revenues through the Provinces? of the Pope St. Dionysius, who assisted the afflicted Churches, even as far as Cappadocia? and, to go higher, of St. Soter, to whom St. Dionysius of Corinth bears a glorious testimony of his charities to the Greek Churches? How entirely had they forgotten the noble independence of Christian poverty, and the maxim of our Lord, that it is more blessed to give than to receive!

It is a disagreeable task to expose facts of this kind; and I fear that some persons who have more piety than knowledge

ledge will be scandalized at it, and will say perhaps that, in Historical relations, such facts should be dissembled, or after being barely named, should not be resumed and dwelt upon in a Dissertation. But the foundation of History is truth, and to dissemble it, even in part, is not to relate it faithfully. A flattering portrait is no likeness; and such is every Panegyric, which makes a person appear commendable by setting forth only his good qualities. Vain and clumsy artifice, which disgusts men of sense, and makes them the more attentive to discover the defects that are so cautiously concealed. To tell half-truths is a species of lying. No man is obliged to write History; but if he will undertake it, he is obliged to tell the whole truth. Spondanus having bestowed great commendations on Guichardin, adds; If sometimes he censures with asperity Princes and other persons whose conduct he relates, this is the fault of the Guilty, and not of the Historian. He would have been far more

reprehensible if he had dissembled those bad actions which may tend to make others wiser and better, and discourage them from committing the like, at least through shame and fear of being exposed themselves in the same manner, according to the saying in the Gospel; There is nothing hid, which shall not be revealed.

Sacred History hath set us an example to follow. Moses palliates neither his own faults, nor those of his people. David was willing that his sin should be recorded, with all its odious circumstances; and in the New Testament, all the Evangelists have taken care to represent the fall of St. Peter. True religion is grounded on sincerity; it wants none of the tricks of human policy. As God permits evils which he could have prevented, because he can make them turn to the benefit of his servants, we ought to believe that he will cause the knowledge of the disorders committed in his Church to conduce to our profit. If indeed these disorders had so ceased
that

that no traces of them remained, possibly it might be proper to bury them in eternal oblivion; but we see and feel too plainly their pernicious effects in the heresies which have torn the Church in pieces for these two hundred years, in the ignorance and superstition which reign in some Catholic countries, and in the corruptions of morality by certain new maxims. And is it not useful to know what gave rise to these deplorable evils?

If we should be ever so desirous to abolish the memory of these ancient disorders, it would not be in our power, unless we could suppress all the writings and all the monuments which remain of the six or seven last centuries. And who could execute such a project? If the Catholics agreed to attempt it, would the Heretics concur with them? Would they not on the contrary be the more sedulous to preserve those records which were so odious to us? Since then it is impossible that these facts should be obliterated, is it not better that they

should be represented faithfully, simply, sincerely, and without disguise by Catholic writers, than surrendered up into the hands of Protestants, who alter, exaggerate, and turn them in the most spiteful manner? Is it not useful to point out to pious people the true reasonable medium between the extremes of some modern writers? The Pope is not Antichrist: but he is not impeccable, nor an absolute Monarch in the Church, in temporals and spirituals. Monastic vows did not proceed from the Devil's shop; but the Monks have degenerated from time to time, and have made a bad use of their wealth and their privileges. The Church hath power to grant Indulgences: but the Canonical Penances were more salutary. The Scholastic Divines are not contemptible Sophists; they have preserved the tradition of sound doctrine: but they are not to be blindly admired, or preferred to the Fathers of the Church. Perhaps, for who knows the designs of God, or hath been admitted into his Councils? perhaps

haps he hath permitted these disorders in his Church, to teach men by their own experience to follow his precepts according to their plain and obvious sense, and not to seek to establish his religion by the maxims of worldly policy. You fancy that wealth joined to virtue will make you happier; you will find the difficulty of joining them together. You think that the Priesthood will have more authority when joined with temporal power; and you will lose the true authority which consists in being esteemed and trusted. You hope to make yourselves formidable and punctually obeyed by pouring out your censures: by so doing you will make those censures contemptible and ineffectual. Be instructed at least by facts, and learn wisdom from the faults and follies of your ancestors.

There are two sorts of persons who take it amiss that the facts which are a disgrace to the Church should be exposed. The first are prophane Politicians, who, ignorant of true religion,

consider it all as an human invention to keep the populace in order, and are afraid of every thing that might tend to diminish the veneration of it in the minds of the vulgar, by undeceiving them. I will have no dispute with these men, who want first to be converted and instructed. But willingly would I satisfy, if it were possible, pious and scrupulous minds, which are alarmed by a zeal without knowledge, and fear where no fear is. What is it that you dread? I would say to them. Is it to know the truth? If so, you chuse to remain in error, or in ignorance. And how can you safely remain in that state, you whose office it is to instruct others? For I speak now to Ecclesiastics, who ought particularly to be acquainted with Ecclesiastical History. In this enlightend age, can we maintain the Donation of Constantine and the Decretals of Isidorus? And if these Records are indefensible, can we approve the consequences which are drawn from them?

Let

Let us then frankly acknowledge that Gregory VII. and Innocent III. deceived by these forgeries, and by the bad Logic of the Divines of their days, have pushed their authority too far, and by extending it have made it odious ; and let us not pretend to justify excesses of which we see both the causes and the wretched effects. For whatsoever can be alledged to the contrary, it is evident that the first ages furnish us with a greater number of pious Popes than the latter, and that the morals and discipline of the Roman Church were far more pure in the earlier times. Now it is not conceivable that the Popes should only then have begun to know their rights, and to exercise their power in its full extent, when their lives began to be less edifying, and their flock to be less regulated. This reflection affords a grievous prejudice against the novel Maxims.

Of all the alterations of discipline, I find none which have more decried the Church than the rigour which she exercised

326 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

exercised against Heretics and excommunicated persons. You have seen how Sulpitius Severus blames and detests the two Bishops Idatius and Ithacius for having solicited the secular judges to banish the Priscillianists, and applied to the Emperor against them. But the indignation was encreased when these Prelates pursued the Priscillianists to Treves, and appeared openly as their accusers. St. Martin instantly pressed Ithacius to desist, and entreated the Emperor Maximus not to shed the blood of these Heretics; and when they were put to death, St. Ambrose and St. Martin would no longer hold communion with Ithacius, or with the Bishops who adhered to him, although they were protected by the Emperor; and Theognostus, a Bishop, gave Sentence publickly against them. As to Martin, he reproached himself all his life afterwards for having occasionally communicated with the Ithacians, and even that with a charitable view to save the life of some innocent persons. So hor-

rible

rible a thing it appeared to them that Prelates should have had an hand in putting to death those Heretics, although their sect was a branch of the detestable heresy of the Manichæans.

The Donatists, and particularly their *Circumcelliones*, exercised great cruelties upon the Catholics, killing some Ecclesiastics, and maiming others; yet St. Augustin in his Letters to Donatus Proconsul of Afric, and to Marcellinus, intreats that these men may not be put to death for it, or punished by the Laws of Retaliation, &c.

Some time before, Marcellinus, Bishop of Apamea in Syria, being burnt alive by Pagans, whose temple he had demolished, his children wanted to have his death revenged. But the Provincial Council opposed it, judging that it was not right to revenge a Martyrdom for which thanks ought rather to be returned to God. Amongst many examples of a like kind, I chuse out this, as it shews particularly the spirit

328 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*
of the Church in the decision of a whole
Council.

But this holy discipline was forgotten from the eighth century. The death of Bonifacius of Mentz was revenged by the Christians of the country, and many Pagans were slain on that account. Venceslas, Duke of Bohemia, having been murdered, for his religion, by his brother Boleflas, Otho I, king of Germany, made war upon Boleflas, to revenge the death of the Martyr. Boleflas the Cruel king of Poland, having killed Stanislas, Bishop of Cracovia, was deprived of his royal state by Gregory VII. as the Polish Historians informs us. As soon as ^e St. Thomas was killed, the Archbishop of Sens, his brother in Law, and the king of France sent to the Pope, to demand justice in behalf of the Prelate, whom yet they called a Martyr; and it was not without pressing solicitations that the Pope was persuaded not to ex-

^e Becket.

communicate

communicate the king of England, and put his kingdom under Interdict, which according to the maxims of that age tended to dethrone him. And so alarmed was the King about it, that he retired to Ireland, till he was assured of obtaining absolution. Pope Innocent III. decreed the severest punishment against the Count of Toulouse, who was supposed guilty of the death of Peter of Castelnau. He ordered him to be excommunicated, he absolved his subjects from their oaths of fidelity, he permitted every Catholic to attack his person and to seize his lands. Nothing can be more remote from the ancient Ecclesiastical mildness than the conduct of Henry Archbishop of Cologne, to revenge the death of St. Englebert his predecessor. As soon as he was elected he swore that he would pursue the offenders all the days of his life. He carried the dead body to the Diet, and presented it to the King and to the Lords. He caused Count Frederic, author of the murder, to be put to the
Ban

Ban of the Empire. He promised a thousand marks of silver to any person that would seize and deliver the Count into his hands; he paid twice as much as he had promised, and having thus taken the Count, he caused him to be put to death in a most barbarous manner by the hangman, though the Count shewed all possible signs of repentance.

As to Heretics, they who were discovered at Orleans, and convicted in the presence of King Robert, were burnt upon the spot; and if the Bishops did not solicit it, it appears not that they opposed it. But the Bogomili, who like these were also a sort of Manichæans, being found out at Constantinople by the Emperor Alexis Comnenus, were condemned to the flames by the Clergy and by the Patriarch himself.

This was the common punishment of the Heretics called Cathari, Paterini, Albigenſes, and others of other denominations, but all of them Manichæans.
They

They had been doomed to death even from the fourth century by the Emperor Theodosius, and afterwards by Justin; and their abominations well deserved it; but it became not Ecclesiastics to press the execution. And we find that the Council of Lateran, under Alexander III. acknowledgeth that the Church meddles not with sanguinary executions, although she permits herself to be assisted by the laws of Christian Princes to repress heresies. This maxim hath ever been constant.

But as to practice, it hath not been always followed. When Pope Innocent III. wrote to King Philip Augustus to turn his arms against the Albigenes, and when in France he caused the Croisade against them to be published, was this a condemnation of such bloody proceedings? I will speak of the Croisades another time; I am here only considering the prosecution of Heretics, and I must confess that I cannot reconcile the conduct of the Ecclesiastics of the thirteenth century with that of the
Saints

Saints of the fourth. When I see Prelates and Abbots at the head of the armies which made so great a slaughter of Heretics, as at the taking of Beziers; when I see the Abbot of Cisteaux desiring the death of the heretics at Minerbe, though he did not dare to condemn them openly, because he was a Monk and a Priest; when I see the Croisez burn these poor wretches with triumph and exultation, as a Writer of those times testifies in many places of his history; in all this I discern no more the true spirit of the Church.

If then they spared not the lives of these men, it is no wonder that they spared not their goods. You have seen that Gregory VII. offered to Sueno, the king of Denmark, a very rich province, occupied by Heretics, for his son to seize and possess. As if the heresy of the conquered gave a lawful title to the conqueror! The Canonists have since established this maxim, that Heretics have no right to possess any thing;

thing; founding the opinion on some passages of St. Augustin produced by Gratian. But they have extended to all heretics and to all their possessions what this Father only said of the Donatists, and of the pecuniary fines which were imposed upon them, and of the plundered goods of the Church which they had been compelled to return. Leave Gratian with his reflections, the Summaries, and the modern Glosses, and consult Originals, and you will see that they breathe mildness and charity, and have only in view just restitutions, and wholesome corrections for the conversion of heretics.

When St. Gregory Nazianzen was called to Constantinople, though he could have availed himself of all the power of the Emperor Theodosius, he trusted only to Christian patience; he did not solicit the Magistrates to put in execution against the heretics those laws which they despised; far from desiring the confiscation of their goods, he would not even take the least step to oblige them
to

to refund the immense revenues of his Church which they had pillaged for forty years; he generously forgave an assassin who came even into his chamber to kill him; he suffered himself to be pelted with stones even to the door of his Church, and answered a friend who was full of indignation at it; It is good to punish the guilty, for the correction of others; but it is better and more divine to suffer. These generous sentiments were forgotten in the twelfth century, when Peter of Celles, writing to St. Thomas of Canterbury, said that nonresisting patience was the only portion of the young Church in the first ages; but now, adds he, that she is come to maturity, she ought to correct her children. As if the Church was not arrived to her maturity in the days of Theodosius, or had suffered persecution from Pagans and Heretics, only through a mere inability of resisting!

I close these melancholy reflections with the change that was introduced into Penances.

Penances. Public Penitence was turned into tortures and temporal punishments. By tortures I mean those horrible spectacles exposed to the Public, when a penitent appeared naked down to his waste, with a rope about his neck, and rods in his hands, with which he was beaten by the Clergy. In this manner, besides other persons, Raimond the old Count of Toulouse was treated. I am of opinion that this was the origin of the *Amendes Honorables* [*Amendæ Honorabiles*] received since many ages in Secular Tribunals, but utterly unknown to all Antiquity. Hence arose also those Fraternities of Penitents established in some provinces; nominal Penitents for the most part. For these Penitences were more specious than serious; they were not proofs of the true conversion of a sinner, they were often merely the effect of fear lest they should lose their temporal possessions. The count of Toulouse dreaded the Croisade which the Pope stirred up against him; and to go farther back, when

336 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

when the Emperor Henry IV. so humbly begged absolution of Pope Gregory VII. as to remain for three days at his door, barefooted and fasting till night, it was because he feared to lose his crown if he remained under excommunication for the whole year. Accordingly neither of these Princes became a better man after absolution than he had been before. These forced penitences were not durable, and the shame and infamy annexed to them, far from producing a salutary confusion, only irritated the offender, and put him upon studying how to revenge the affront. For, as Chrysostom observes, he who is insulted becomes the more audacious, and despises and hates the insulter.

To make these penances the more felt, pecuniary mulcts were added to them, of which the payment was exacted before the absolution was granted; and if the payment was duly made, the rest of the penance was easily overlooked. You have seen how St. Hugo of Lincoln repressed this abuse. Thus
then

then penances and absolutions became temporal transactions with respect to private persons as well as to Princes. No longer was any care taken to explore by long trials the conversion and renovation of heart, which was the thing intended by the Canonical Penitences; but the point was, to get proper securities for the restitution of an usurped property, of depredations and damages, or for the payment of a fine; and as the Penitent, especially if he was a Prince, was in haste to remove the effects of an Excommunication, or of an Interdict, his first step was to procure absolution, by giving an oath that he would satisfy the Church within a certain time, under pain of having the excommunication renewed. These promises often were not performed, and then all was to be done over again; for the unconverted offender was in no hurry to give the promised satisfaction, when by absolution he had obtained all that he cared for, namely to enter into his rights, and to be delivered from the pre-

338 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

sent dread of losing them. Of this you have seen many an example, and more shall be produced hereafter. At the same time was introduced the practice of granting the absolution itself in the secret penitence, as soon as confession was made, and satisfaction enjoined and accepted; though in ancient times, absolution was not granted till the penance was fully accomplished, or at least in a great measure. This alteration was founded on the reasonings of Scholastic Doctors, who held that external absolution ought not to be refused to him who was supposed to have received it internally from God, by virtue of the apparent contrition of his heart; and that being in a state of grace, he could more profitably perform satisfactory works. But it ought to have been considered that man is much more excited to act by the hope of obtaining what he desires, than by gratitude for having received it, or by faithfulness in fulfilling the promises which he made, in order to obtain it. A sick man observes

observes much more the diet prescribed to him for the recovery of his lost health, than for the preservation of it when he thinks himself cured. Few creditors are to be found who will give a discharge beforehand, upon a promise made or even sworn to by the debtor that he will pay at a set time.

Besides, penances, or satisfactory works, had been relaxed more and more from the strictness of the old Canons, which were now proposed to Confessors, only as examples to be consulted upon occasion, and not as rules to be exactly followed; upon a false supposition, that nature was enfeebled, and that the human body had no longer the strength to bear fastings and other austerities. Some Doctors went so far as to say that it was mere Judaizing, to adhere to the letter of the ancient Canons. They also extended to all Priests a right which the Bishops had always exercised, to mitigate penances, either by lessening the penitential works, or by shortning the time. At last the

maxim was established, that all penances were to be left to the discretion of the Confessor; and as even then the number of Confessors both Secular and Regular was become very great, it is no wonder that they did not always act prudently in this affair, and that penances even for heinous offences were very slight and superficial.

It is true that the multitude of Indulgences, and the facility of granting them, became a great obstacle to the zeal of the more judicious Confessors. Hard was the task to persuade a sinner to fasting and to other discipline, who could buy it off by a few alms, or by paying a visit to a Church. For the Bishops of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries granted indulgences for all sorts of pious works, as the building a Church, the supporting an hospital, and even for public works of other kinds, for making a bridge, or a causeway, or mending the roads.

These

These are the Indulgences which the fourth Council of Lateran calls indiscreet and superfluous, which make the Keys of the Church contemptible, and weaken its discipline. To repress this abuse, it orders that for the Dedication of a Church, the Indulgence granted shall not be for more than one year, although many Bishops should be assembled there; for each of them, it seems, pretended to give his own Indulgence.

William, Bishop of Paris, who lived in those times, explains to us the motives of these Indulgences; He who hath the power, says he, to impose penal satisfactions may either augment or diminish them, as he finds it expedient for the honour of God, the salvation of souls, and the public or private utility. Now it is manifest that more honour accrues to God, and more benefit to souls, by the building a Church where God is continually served with prayers and sacrifices, than would arise from

the severest performance of penal works. Therefore it is the duty of the Bishop to convert these bodily penances into works more useful. And again: It is to be supposed that the Saints, who have so much interest with God, obtain from him most ample Indulgences for those who honour them, by doing good to the Churches where their memory is revered. As to the Indulgences granted to those who make or repair bridges and highways, these are works useful to Pilgrims and other pious travellers, besides the common benefit enjoyed by all the Faithful.

These arguments, if they had been solid, ought to have influenced the Bishops of the first ages, who had established the Canonical penitences; but those good men extended their views much farther. They knew that God is more honoured by the pure and pious morals of Christians than by building and ornamenting Churches, by chanting in them, by ceremonies, by bodily services, which are only the externals of religion,

religion, whose essential part is righteousness or virtue. Now as Christians for the most part are not so happy as to preserve their baptismal innocence, those wise Pastors, instructed by the Apostles, had studied all possible means of restoring sinners, and preserving them from relapses; and they found no better remedies and preservatives than to engage them to inflict voluntary punishments upon themselves by fastings, watchings, retirement, recollection, silence, and the retrenchment of all pleasures, by which they may confirm their good resolutions; to be constant in prayer and meditation on sacred and eternal truths; and to practise these religious exercises for a considerable time, that they may be assured of the certainty of their conversion. In vain do we speculate and run into subtle refinements; these good practices tended more directly to the salvation of souls, and consequently to the glory of God, than alms given for the erecting, repairing, and decorating a Church. A

344 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

sinner truly affected with the heinousness of his guilt, and with the eternal punishment which it deserves, will account all mortification to be a light burden. He who wants to obtain pardon upon the easiest terms, is not converted; all that he wants is to quiet his mind, and to save appearances. In a word, Let us appeal to experience. Never were Christians more religious than when Canonical penitences were regularly kept up: never were they more corrupted than since that discipline was abolished.

Give me leave to propose to you a parallel instance: A Prince by a false clemency offers to all criminals some easy methods to avoid punishment; as moderate fines applied to defray the expences of his buildings and of his troops; a formal appearance at his palace; a petition for pardon; or, if the crimes have been very heinous, an obligation laid upon the offender to lift himself for a soldier, and to serve for some years in the army. What think you

you of this? Would his kingdom be well governed? Would innocence of manners and integrity in commerce flourish there? Would the highways be safe for travellers, and the public tranquillity maintained? Would not vice of every kind and an unbounded licentiousness prevail, together with all the fatal consequences of such impunity? The application is obvious.

We must then return to the maxim of St. Paul, that all things which are lawful are not always expedient. For this same Prince, who should thus pardon all criminals, would only exercise his own rights, since we suppose him to be the Sovereign; but he would exercise them most indiscreetly. The same is the case of Indulgences. Every good Catholic will allow that the Church can grant them, and that she ought to grant them in certain cases, and that she hath always exercised this power: but it is the duty of her Ministers to dispense these favours with discretion

discretion and caution, and not with an useless or a pernicious profusion.

I conclude this Discourse with a desire that you would remember, what I think hath been proved, that the alterations in the discipline of the Church since five or six hundred years were not introduced by the authority of Bishops or of Councils, to correct ancient practices; but by negligence, by ignorance, and by error grounded on the false Decretals, and on the false reasoning of Scholastic Doctors. God grant that we may make a good use of his Grace, by which we have the happiness of being born in a more enlightened age; and that if we cannot retrieve the ancient discipline, we may at least esteem it, reverence it, and regret it."



A FEW strictures on this Dissertation will suffice.

Here are corruptions enough, and more than enough, acknowledged and set forth with some degree of fairness,
to

to which more might be added. What followed? Did the Popes and the Court of Rome own them, and endeavour to correct them? No; nothing that deserved the name of amendment was produced; nothing done to any purpose by the Councils of Pisa, Constance, and Basil. At last arose Luther, and other Reformers, who were persecuted with the utmost malice and fury. Then came the Council of Trent, which made bad worse; and thus things stand at this day.

Add to the rest, the Jesuits and the Inquisitors:

*Tristius haud illis monstrum, nec scævior ulla
Pestis et ira Deum Stygiis sese extulit undis.*

Can Protestants enter into alliance and communion with such a generation of vipers?

Fleury, and others of his sentiments, who wish for some reformation, would perhaps willingly bring the state of the Church, as to doctrine and discipline, to its condition in the fourth and fifth centuries,

turies. Alas! This is doing very little. Many were the faults and errors of those times, and the Mystery of Iniquity was even then working. We must go to the fountain-head, to the doctrine of the New Testament.

I can by no means allow Fleury's supposition that the Popes mentioned by him, and particularly the Execrable Hildebrand, erred *bona fide*, being misled by the Decretals. The Heretics of those days, such of them I mean who acknowledged the sacred authority of the New Testament, particularly the honest Waldenses, discerned very plainly that the powers usurped by the Popes and Ecclesiastics were tyrannical and antichristian, and consequently that the Decretals which established some of those notions must have been impudent forgeries. Why could not the Popes discern the same? Because profaneness, pride, ambition, and avarice hardened their hearts, and blinded their eyes; because they would neither examine, nor let other people examine.

It

It is to be supposed that the Donations of Constantine, the Decretals, some of the Councils, and other Documents and Records for the same purpose, were forged by the Popes themselves, or by persons acting under their direction, about the ninth century^c.

He compares the extravagant usurpations of Hildebrand, and of other Popes of the same stamp, with the more modest behaviour of St. Leo and St. Gregory. But the truth is, that all the Popes, from the time of Constantine, Saints as well as Sinners, laboured to extend their jurisdiction, and uniformly carried on the same scheme. Rome was not built in a day, says the Proverb; and Popedom was not built in a day; but one encroachment was followed by another, till at last it brought on the *Seculum Hildebrandinum*.

He complains of false miracles, and yet hath inserted thousands of them in his Ecclesiastical History; like the

^c See Mosheim, p. 328.

Quack who vends his powder of post, and cries, Beware of counterfeits.

As to the affair of persecution, he rather shuffles it over, though indeed he seems to have said as much against it as it was safe for him to say. But he should not have commended the lenity of St. Augustin, who after he had dropped some reasonable expressions in favour of Christian mildness and moderation, played the Turn-coat, and became the Preacher and the Patron of Persecution.

The Church ought not to shed blood. So says Fleury; and so says the Inquisition at this day. That honour is transferred to the Civil Magistrate; and thus the Priest is the Judge, and the King is the Hang-man.

As to penance, or repentance, you must not expect to find just notions of it in these quarters, and Fleury saw only a part of the truth. The unwholesome austerities and frantic macerations of Fanatics of ancient times, who were called

called Saints, introduced and established in the Christian world wrong notions concerning penitence, and penitential works. Repentance is a change of mind for the better, and the proper penance of a sinner is to mortify his unruly passions and his lusts, and, to the utmost of his power, to repair all the wrongs that he hath done. In other respects, the duties of a repenting sinner are nearly the same which are required of all Christians.

A. 1201. The Pope's Legate at Cologn ordered that in the Mass, at the elevation of the Host, all the people should prostrate themselves in the Church, at the sound of the bell, and implore God's mercy, till the consecration of the chalice. He ordered also that when the Sacrament was carried to the sick, the Scholar and Ringer should go before the Priest, and ring the bell, to admonish the people to worship Jesus Christ in the streets and in the houses. Hence came these two pious customs.

The Pope by his Legate presumed to elect an Emperor of Germany, or King of the Romans. The Lords and Prelates made warm remonstrances against this usurpation ; to which his Holiness returned a most impudent answer ^f.

The language which was called the *Roman-Rustic* was used in the Provinces which had obeyed the Romans ; and from this language, and its different dialects in different places, sprang the Italian, the French and the Spanish ^g.

A. 1202. Innocent was consulted whether the water mixed with the wine is changed into the blood of Christ. He answers in the affirmative, after having acknowledged that the Scholastics were of different opinions about it.

At the same time, it was debated at Constantinople whether in the Eucharist the body of Christ was received incorruptible, as it was after his resurrection, or corruptible, as it was before.

^f Fleury, xvi. 90.

^g Spener, *Hist. Germ.*

This dispute was carried on not only by Divines, but by the Vulgar in the streets and in the markets. It is to be supposed that the *Incorruptibles* got the better. It was also questioned whether Christ, whilst he was here upon earth, performed natural actions, like other men^h.

This was the century in which hanging and burning Heretics for God's sake became the universal practice, being chiefly promoted by the Ecclesiastics and by the Pope, who declared in formal terms that no faith was to be kept with heretics, and no oaths binding on that occasionⁱ.

A. 1203. All the conquests made by the Croisez were supposed to become the Pope's patrimony.

The Popes now began to find the great advantages which accrued to them from the Expeditions to the holy land, and therefore violently pressed forwards this pious war. But the Croisez, who were French and Venetians, instead of

^h Fleury, xvi. 106. Bibl. Univ. vii. 66.

ⁱ Ibid. xvi. 174. 240.

fighting the Infidels, took Constantinople a second time, and made a ^k Latin Emperor.

The Greeks ^l chose for their Emperor Theodorus Lascaris, whose residence was at Nicæa in Natolia. From this time there were two Emperors of the Greeks, the one a Frank, the other a Greek, till Michael Palæologus ^m recovered Constantinople.

The Croisez found and carried off, besides vast wealth and things of real value, a prodigious number of holy Reliques, of which a curious Inventory may be seen in Fleury; and they crowned Baldwin Emperor. Nicetas hath given us a tragical account of their impieties and barbarities.

Another expedition was ⁿ undertaken by the Italians and Germans; but it came to nought.

^k A. 1204.

^l A. 1205.

^m A. 1216.

ⁿ A. 1217.

A third ° performed something, but yet no great matter.

Other expeditions, less famous, and altogether unsuccessful, were ^p undertaken.

Then Louis IX. of France, called Saint Louis, ^a attempted the same; and was taken prisoner, and ransomed. He ^r renewed the war, and died, like a fool, of the plague, in Afric.

Then the European Princes were at last cured of this frenzy; and the Power of the Latins in the East was extinguished, A. 1291.

These repeated crosses and calamities were owing not so much to the conduct and courage of the Mahometans, as to the dissensions of the Christians and their treachery towards each other, to the worse than Pagan morals of these religious soldiers of Christ, and to the

• A. 1228.

^p A. 1239, and 1240.

• A. 1258.

^r A. 1270.

356 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

consummate ignorance, stubbornness, and fauciness of the Papal Legates^{*}.

Saint Louis was a great patron of the Inquisition. This pious Prince, and it was no small part of his piety, had a most implacable hatred towards Heretics of all denominations, and held that such persons should not be reasoned with, but killed upon the spot[†].

Pope Innocent gave leave to the Croisiez to help themselves to necessities wheresoever they found them. This permission, says ^u Fleury, to live upon pillage in a Friend's country is remarkable; and the more so, as the Pope authorizes it by examples taken from Scripture.

A. 1206. At this time *Dominic*, of Castille, began to act the Missionary and the Inquisitor; and *Francis*, an Italian, signalized himself as a Preacher and a Saint. These two famous Fana-

^{*} Mosheim, p. 492, &c. Fleury, xvi. 120.

[†] Mosheim, p. 549.

^u xvi, 120.

tics and Founders of two pernicious Orders, turned the brains of multitudes, and did infinite mischief in the world^x.

A. 1208. From the old statutes of the Church of Paris it appears that when a marriage was celebrated, the Curate for his fee had some dishes of the wedding-feast sent home to him^y.

A. 1212. One of the exploits of St. Francis was to persuade a girl of eighteen, called St. Clara, to elope from her parents; and her younger sister followed her example. For this he ought to have been shut up in a jail, or in a mad-house, the rest of his days. This St. Clara was Abbess of a Monastery, famous for her austerities and macerations, and received answers to her prayers from the consecrated Wafer, which she kept in a box. She died A. 1253^z.

^x Fleury, xvi. 218. Bibl. Univ. ix. 40. Cave, ii. 283, 344. Mosheim, p. 517.

^y Fleury, xvi. 244.

^z Ibid. xvi. 316. xvii. 486.

358 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

A. 1213. Innocent III. exhorting the Christian world to the Croisade, acted the Prophet, foretold the downfall of the power of Mahomet, and called him the *Beast* in the Revelation. Thus Antichrist was shifting off his own character, and transferring it upon another.

The boys and girls in France and Germany caught the epidemical madness, and listed themselves, as Croisez, to go to Jerusalem, and ran away from home. Many of these poor children perished in the fields and forests^a.

A little before this time was born Brunetto Latini at Florence, who was the reviver of letters in Italy, and was Orator, Poet, Historian, Philosopher, Theologer, and Politician. Danté was his disciple. This author speaks of the Mariner's Compass, and of this use of the loadstone, forty years before A. 1300, which is the time usually fixed for that discovery^b.

^a Fleury, xvi. 323.

^b See Hist. de l'Acad. iv. 462. Bayle *Dante*. Reinesius *De Deo Endoxellico*; and the Notes of Crenius in his *Museum Philolog.* ii. 343.

A. 1215. Till Innocent III. the manner of the change in the Eucharist was not accounted an article of faith: but he in the Council of Lateran established *Transubstantiation*, both the *doctrine* and the *word*. Matthew Paris doth justice to this Pope by saying that he was the most avaricious and ambitious of men, and capable of committing all sorts of crimes. He adds that Innocent caused seventy articles of faith to be read before the Council, and commanded the holy Fathers there assembled to approve them in the lump, without entering into any examination. And Allix affirms that the Decree which established *Transubstantiation* never obtained the force of a Law till some time afterwards; and indeed the doctrine of *Transubstantiation*, notwithstanding this decision, was still contested and rejected by several Prelates and Doctors^c.

Innocent managed his matters so, that he made King John surrender to

^c Bibl. Univ. iii. 402. v. 464. Fleury, xvi. 384. Mosheim, p. 537.

him the kingdoms of England and Ireland, and act only as his deputy and his vassal.

A. 1223. Francis went up into a mountain, and there fasting on bread and water he wrote his Law, that is, the Rule for his Order of Mendicants, by divine revelation. He gave it to his Vicar, Elias, who lost it. And then the Saint went up a second time, and did the same thing again, pretending that it was all the word of God^d.

In the year following he had the *Stigmata*, or the five wounds of Jesus Christ formed in his body. Either the whole story is an imposture vouched by himself and by his lying disciples; or he made the wounds himself; or, as some have fancied, they were the effect of a strong imagination in his fanatical mind. But of these solutions, the last will seem the least probable to most persons.

^d Fleury, xvi. 553.

In the year 1222, an Impostor was found in England, who had upon him the five wounds of Christ, in his hands, his feet, and his side. But he was convicted, in a Council held at Oxford, by his own confession.

Long afterwards, Sister Mary, a Portuguese Nun, had also on her body the five wounds, and passed for a Saint of the first magnitude. But the artifice was discovered by the Inquisition, A. 1588^e.

“ That Francis really had the *Stigmata*, I make no question, since there are many sufficient vouchers for it. But without all peradventure, this man who was extremely superstitious and fanatical made them himself^f ”.

A. 1226. Louis VIII. of France headed a Croisade, to cut the throats of all the Albigeneses, and took Avignon^g.

^e Fleury, xvi. 544, &c. Bibl. Univ. viii. 149. Rapin. Vol. i. p. 352.

^f Mosheim, p. 579.

^g Fleury, xvi. 601.

A. 1227.

A. 1227. An Inquisition was established in France. St. Dominic hath the honour of being the Father and the Founder of that Diabolical Institution ^h.

A. 1228. An Armenian Archbishop came to England, and with a grave face told our Monks the story of the *Rambling Jew*, who, having insulted Jesus Christ when he stood before Pilate, was doomed by our Lord to live and to travel about till the day of judgment, and was then in Armenia ⁱ.

Now Papal impudence was at its height. Gregory IX. excommunicated the Emperor Frederic, absolved his subjects from their allegiance, made war upon him, and pillaged all the Ecclesiastics, and particularly the English, to support his expences. His troops signalized themselves by their wickedness, and committed all kinds of outrages and barbarities.

^h Fleury, xvi. 631. Bibl. Univ. xx. 218.

ⁱ Fleury, xvi. 654.

This Pope canonized St. Francis, having got his miracles attested by a competent number of false witnesses^k.

A. 1229. In the Council of Toulouse, a most severe and sanguinary Inquisition was established against Heretics.

One of its Canons is; It shall not be permitted to Laymen to have the books of the Old and New Testament; only they, who out of devotion desire it, may have a Psalter, a Breviary, and the Hours of the Virgin. But we absolutely forbid them to have the above-mentioned Books translated into the vulgar tongue.

“ This is the first time, says^l Fleury, that I have met with this prohibition; but it may be favourably explained by observing that the minds of men being then much irritated, there was no other method to put a stop to contentions than by taking away from them the

^k Fleury, xvi. 644.

^l Ibid. 676.

364 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

holy Scriptures, of which the Heretics made a bad use."

A poor excuse indeed!

A. 1230. The Prussians were at this time Pagans: but the Knights of the Teutonic Order entered into the country, and waged bloody war with them for fifty-three years, and at last compelled them, and with them the Lithuanians, to submit to their government, and to receive Christianity, such as it was, from the ministry of these execrable ruffians.

A. 1231. Antony of Padua was a famous Fanatic Saint, and Field-Preacher, in those days^m.

A. 1234. St. Dominic was now canonized. The multitude of miracles which he wrought both living and dead, and the delightful odour of his carcase, which when it was taken up

^m Fleury, xvi. 523. xvii. 15.

perfumed

perfumed all the place, were sufficient vouchers for his Saintshipⁿ.

A. 1231. In a Council of Anjou, clandestine marriages are declared null; and to prevent them it is forbidden to contract them by words *de præsenti*, unless the Banns be first published in the Church, according to custom.

A. 1235. Our learned Bishop Grost-head was a strenuous adversary to Papal usurpations. Fleury says that he was a pious and upright Prelate, but that his zeal was bitter, and his discourses void of moderation. Indeed it is not to be expected that any writer of the Romish Communion should dare to justify him.

The Pope, enraged at his free speeches and bold complaints, wanted to dispatch him; but some Cardinals declared it to be more adviseable to let him alone, lest, said they, it should quite alienate the English from their obedience to the

* Fleury, xvii. 52.

See

366 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

See of Rome ; which will happen some time or other. Thus, says Fleury, they seemed to have foreseen the evil which came to pass three hundred years after °.

A. 1238. Gregory IX. forbade the Greeks to shew at Jerusalem the *holy fire* which used to descend into Christ's Sepulchre on the Saturday before Easter. It is pleasant to hear the Pope and Fleury^p complaining of this imposture, this sham-miracle, which, I think, still continues, *inter Græculos mendaces*.

A. 1240. At this time lived our valuable Historian Matthew Paris^q.

“ Matthew Paris is an honest, sincere, and good writer, excepting the miracles, visions, apparitions, and phantoms, which he hath admitted in his works, according to the taste of those times^r. ”

• Cave, ii. 294. Fleury, xvii. 490. Rapin, i. 354.

^p xvii. 173.

^q Cave, ii. 294.

^r Menagiana, ii. 98.

He is commended by Lipsius^s.

A. 1248. The Talmud was condemned by the Pope, and a vast collection of Jewish books was burnt in France^t.

A. 1259. A Sect of *Flagellantes*, or *Floggers*, arose in Italy, consisting of men and women, old and young, nobles and beggars; for the disorder grew epidemical. It spread itself into Germany, Poland, and other regions. But Princes and Prelates strenuously opposed it and put an end to it; yet it revived again in after-times^u.

A. 1264. The annual Feast of the Holy Sacrament was instituted upon the revelations of a fanatical female called Juliana^x.

“The Latins dared not, even in the twelfth century, to attempt the esta-

^s Epist. Cent. v. 83.

^t Fleury, xvii. 418.

^u Ibid. 630. Bibl. Univ. viii. 455.

^x Fleury, xviii. 46:

blishment

368 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

blishment of this Festival, although they then entertained such notions of the Sacrament as were a proper foundation for such practices. These notions therefore were sedulously inculcated during the twelfth century. But when by long and subtle disputations, and zealous homilies, and above all, by fire and sword, by military executions, proscriptions, tortures, wars and massacres, the doctrine of Transubstantiation was so fully established that no man dared to open his mouth against it, then they began to think of adding to it an annual Festival, as a farther confirmation, which at last was brought to pass, under Pope Urban 7."

A. 1270. Many errors taught by Philosophical Divines were condemned at Paris. Here are some of them :

The human will acts by necessity ; or rather is passive. All things here below are governed and over-ruled by the

7 Dallæus *De Cult. Lat.* p. 922.

celestial

celestial bodies. The world is eternal, and there never was a first man. The soul dies with the body. God knows not any thing, except himself. There is no providence. In the Deity there is no Trinity. God cannot beget his like. God knows not future contingences. There is no predestination. Creation is impossible according to reason, though faith requires us to believe it. The heavenly bodies have souls. Accidents cannot exist without a subject. The most excellent state of the mind is to philosophize. It is not necessary to pray, or to confess sins, except to save appearances. A resurrection is impossible. Fornication is no sin. An observance of the moral virtues sufficeth to acquire life eternal. Death puts an end to the whole man. Theological discourses are grounded on fables, and of no value, &c.^z

The Pragmatic Edict of St. Louis was published with a view to restrain Papal oppression, and to secure the

^z Fleury, xviii. 161. 269.

privileges of the Gallican Church. It is in Dupin ^a.

A. 1278. Roger Bacon flourished, who seems to have been as great a genius as hath arisen in any age.

A. 1281. The Communion in both kinds was not yet entirely laid aside in England ^b.

A. 1290. Jacobus De Voragine wrote the *Legend* which is called *aurea*; and is full of most ridiculous miracles. It is, saith Vives, *Legenda Aurea ab homine oris ferrei cordis plumbei scripta*.

However, this man was the first who translated the Scriptures of the Old Testament into Italian ^c.

At the same time Joannes de Parisiis composed a Treatise on the Eucharist, of which an account is given in the *Bibl. Universelle* ^d. It is a curious tract; it shews the absurdity of Transubstan-

^a x. 133.

^b Fleury, xviii. 373.

^c Cave, ii. 334. Fleury, xviii. 561.

^d iii. 395. See Cave, ii. 333. Fleury, xix. 85. Moheim, p. 537.

tiation,

tiation, even as it is represented by this defender of it; it shews to what perplexity and distress the Doctors were driven in accounting for the bodily presence.

A. 1284. A prodigy happened at Constantinople. The Priest who was to officiate found one of the consecrated Hosts so black and corrupted, that it had no longer the appearance or the *Accidents* of bread. Therefore they put it into the place appointed for such purposes, called by the Greeks, *the holy oven*^c.

A. 1287. Raimond Lulle made his appearance: he was a very strange Enthusiast^f.

A. 1290. A Jew at Paris stole the Host, and stabbed it, and flung it into the fire, and endeavoured by all means to destroy it; but it wrought so many

^c Fleury, xviii. 434.

^f Ibid. 494. 595. xix. 252. Mosheim, p. 566.

372 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

miracles, that the poor Devil was discovered, and was burnt alive. Fleury gives us this for a true story^g.

A. 1291. Acre was taken, and the holy Land entirely lost; and here end the Croisades.

A. 1292. John Pecham, Archbishop of Canterbury, died this year. He was a rigid disciplinarian, and a lover of money. He enriched all his family, and left behind him more than five thousand pounds, a great sum in those days^h.

In this century the Jews were accused of having murdered many Christian children. But there are no good proofs of the facts, as Fleury fairly ownsⁱ.

“ The Tribunal of the Inquisition was extremely odious, as it appears from the difficulty of establishing it even in Italy and in the Ecclesiastical

^g Fleury, xviii. 536.

^h Ibid. xviii. 562. Rapin, i. 482.

ⁱ Fleury, xviii. 485.

State, and from the fate of those Inquisitors who were murdered, and are ranked amongst the Martyrs. The Inquisition was not only hated by the Heretics whom it hunted out and pursued, but even by the Catholics; by the Prelates and Magistrates, whose jurisdiction it diminished, and by other persons whom it terrified with the rigour of its proceedings. Such complaints were frequent, as were also the Constitutions of Popes to moderate this severity. Thus some nations, which at first admitted the Inquisition, rejected it afterwards, as the French; and many never would receive it, amongst whom, notwithstanding, the Christian religion is as well taught and practised, as in countries where the Inquisitorial authority is carried to its highest degree. They who have been in these different countries will bear witness to this assertion.

The end for which the Inquisition was established is to keep out or to abolish heresy; but the means used for

this purpose are such as naturally produce hypocrisy and ignorance. The dread of being accused, imprisoned, and punished for mere suspicions, grounded perhaps upon some imprudent expression, deters people from ever speaking about religion, proposing their doubts, asking questions, and seeking instruction. The shortest and easiest way is to hold your tongue, or to speak and act like others, whether you think like them or not. An habitual sinner, who is resolved not to leave his concubine, goes to the Communion at Easter, lest an information should be brought against him to the Inquisition, as against a suspected heretic. The countries of the Inquisition are the most abundant in loose Casuists.

Reading is one of the best means of acquiring instruction ; but it is not to be had in those regions. The Scriptures are not to be found there in the vulgar tongue, but only in Latin. To have an Hebrew Bible would make a man pass for a Jew. Many good
editions

editions of the Fathers and other Ecclesiastical Authors are prohibited, as having been published by heretical or suspected persons. At least, it is required to strike out a preface, an advertisement, a commentary, a note; to blot out here and there a line, or a word, as it is specified at large in the Index of the Spanish Inquisition. Without these corrections it is forbidden to read the book, or to offer it to sale. The Booksellers therefore are not willing to deal in such goods; and thus many excellent books never enter into those places."

These are * Fleury's Remarks; and they do him honour.

"What great loss Christianity suffered in Asia, is very manifest. If the Saracens had held the same principles which were received amongst the Latin Christians of these times, they would not have suffered one Christian to live in their dominions. But this na-

* Vol. xix. Discourse, p. xx.

376 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

tion, though guilty of various crimes and oppressions, yet judged it to be an act of too much iniquity and cruelty; whilst the Romans accounted it a pious deed to destroy by fire and sword all who were of a different religion from themselves, and refused to be converted.

After the new kingdom of Jerusalem was overturned, many of the Latins remained in Syria, who retired to the steep mountains of Libanus, and by degrees so lost all sense of humanity and religion, that those of them who still remain seem to be little better than mere Atheistical Brutes.

The Latin writers of this age make many complaints of persons amongst them, who were open enemies of the Christian religion, and even deriders of the Deity; nor are these accusations to be accounted vain and groundless. For men of parts, who attentively considered the religion which was then delivered to the public by the Popes, and their creatures and agents, as true Christianity,

Christianity, and supported by violence and massacres, and who could find none to instruct them better, and to set the Gospel in a true light, were easily led into the opinion that Christianity was a fable invented and propagated by Priests for the sake of their own emoluments. Add to this that the Aristotelic Philosophy, which then reigned in all the Schools of Europe, and was looked upon as Truth and Right Reason itself, disposed many persons to reject the Theological Doctrines of a Divine Providence, the immortality of the soul, the creation of the world, and other religious principles, and to be spreaders of impiety.

These Doctors, taught, strange as it may seem, that there was only one Intellect, common to all men, that every thing was subjected to an absolute Necessity, that there was no Providence, that the world had been from eternity, that the soul perished at death, and other such like tenets, and supported them all by authorities taken out of
I their

their Philosopher Aristotle. But to save their own fortunes and lives, they then acted the same part which the later Aristotelics did in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries. They made a distinction between Theological and Philosophical Truth, to secure themselves from Ecclesiastical censures. These things, said they, are true according to the Philosopher; but not according to the Catholic Faith.

The deplorable condition of the Greeks left them neither spirits nor leisure to pursue learned studies. Much happier was the state of the Latins: for the European Princes having found by experience the manifold advantages which arose from the cultivation of the Liberal Arts, sought out, encouraged, honoured, and rewarded learned men. Among these Patrons none distinguished themselves more eminently than the Emperor Frederic II, who was learned himself; and Alphonfus X, king of Castille and Leon: of whom the first founded an Academy at Naples,

ples, procured a Latin version of the works of Aristotle, drew a great resort of scholars to his court, and gave many other proofs of his zeal for literature; the second acquired eternal fame by his Astronomical Tables, and other works. Thus Schools were erected in many places, and various privileges were conferred upon the students; and these sodalities became corporations, or smaller republics, with a jurisdiction of their own.

Such were the Schools or Academies at Padua, Modena, Naples, Capua, Tholouse, Salamanca, Lyon, Cologne, and other cities; in which the whole circle of learning was not taught, but only some parts of it. The Academy of Paris, which surpassed the rest, as in other respects, so in the number of Professors and Students, was the first which took in all branches of learning, all arts and sciences, and therefore was the first *University*, or as they called it *Studium Universale*; and this example was gradually followed by the rest. In
this

this Parent of the European Universities, the Doctors were distributed into four Colleges, according to the different sciences which they professed; and these Colleges were afterwards called *Faculties*. One of these Doctors, chosen by the suffrages of his brethren, was President for a certain time, and was called *The Dean*. The Head of the University was the Chancellor, who was also Archbishop of Paris; but he not having leisure to execute that office, a *Rector* was appointed as his Deputy. Robert de Sorbone, a pious and opulent man, and a friend of Louis IX, founded and endowed a College of Divines, which from him is still called *the Sorbone*.

Philology, or Polite Literature, or *the Humanities*, as they are called, did not with all these encouragements keep pace with other branches of knowledge. For most of the young students chose rather to study the Canon and the Civil Law, as the surer way to profit and honours; or confined them-

themselves to Philosophy, to acquire the reputation of being acute and ingenious. Hence arose grievous complaints of the Popes and Prelates that Literature and the Liberal Arts were neglected; and endeavours were used, to call off the students from Law and Philosophy to these occupations; but it was in vain. Yet there were amongst the writers of this age some who are far above contempt.

Nor was Europe altogether destitute of men of genius, and of penetration, who although they had much esteem for Aristotle, yet endeavoured to carry human knowledge still farther, and despised that dry and jejune way of philosophizing which was contained in his writings. The most renowned amongst these were¹ Roger Bacon, called *Doctor Admirabilis*, and well deserving that title, skilled beyond the pitch of those times in Philosophy, Mathematics, Chemistry, Mechanics,

¹ He was an Englishman, and a Franciscan.

Languages,

Languages, and many other things, and ennobled by the great discoveries which he made; Arnoldus Villanovanus, a Frenchman according to some, a Spaniard as others say, celebrated for his knowledge of Physic, Philosophy, Chemistry, Poetry, besides other accomplishments; Petrus de Abano, or Apono, an Italian, and a Physician of Padua, called *Conciliator*, from a book of his, intitled, *Conciliator differentiarum Philosophorum et Medicorum*, a man of an acute understanding, and deeply skilled in Philosophy, Astronomy, Physic, and Mathematics. But the rewards which these excellent persons received for their abilities and their useful industry were, to be called Magicians and Heretics by an ignorant world, and with great difficulty to escape fire and faggot. Bacon languished many years in a jail; and the bodies of the other two, after their decease, were condemned to the flames by the Inquisitors.

Both

Both the Greeks and the Latins censure and detest with much freedom the horrible vices of their Prelates and Teachers; and no one who is acquainted with the state of those times will think that they carried their complaints too far. Some great men indeed made attempts to cure this leprosy, which was diffused from the head to all the members; but they had not resolution and power equal to the arduous undertaking. The calamities of the times would not suffer the Greek Emperors to bring about a reformation; and the Latins were curbed and depressed by the superstition of the age, and the immense wealth of the Roman Pontiffs.

Innocent III. who died A. 1216, followed the plan of Gregory VII. and pretended to be supreme Lord and Master in temporals and spirituals; a man learned, for those times, and laborious, but rough, cruel, avaricious, and arrogant. He made Kings, just
as

384 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

as he thought proper, in Asia and in Europe. His own Letters give abundant instances of the tyrannical dominion which he exercised, whilst Europe looked on with silence and astonishment.

Several new Monastic Orders were established in this century.

Multitudes also of Sectarists were to be found, of men called *Fratricelli*, or *Beguardi*, and of other denominations, to whom are to be added the *Flagellantes*.

Amongst those who cultivated Logical or Philosophical Divinity, the principal are Albertus Magnus, Thomas Aquinas, and Bonaventura. It must be acknowledged that these men had a strong desire of wisdom, a sharp wit, and a dexterity in discussing subtle and intricate points; though on many accounts they be reprehensible.

Particular caution is to be used in reading those authors who in these
and

and the following times treated of morality, and gave rules for the conduct of life. For although they use the same words and expressions which are to be found in the Scriptures, and which we now employ, yet they took them in a sense entirely different. Justice, charity, piety, faith, are not with them what our Saviour and his Apostles meant by those virtues. He is a pious person, according to Christ, who hath dedicated his heart to God and to God's precepts: but these Doctors call that man pious and holy, who strips himself of his worldly possessions to enrich the Priests, who builds Churches and Monasteries, and neither rejects nor neglects any thing that the Pope requires to be believed, and to be performed. It is lawful and commendable, as they teach, to oppress, torment, and destroy Heretics, that is, men who will not submit to the decrees of the Roman See. Justice therefore, in their estimation, is quite a different qua-

lity from that justice which the Scriptures recommend and require.

The Roman Pontifs during this century waged violent and incessant war with Heretics, who departed from the doctrines and decisions of the Church, and called in question the authority and jurisdiction of the Popes. For the Cathari, the Waldenses, the Petrobrusiani, and many other Sects had spread themselves almost through all Europe, especially through Italy, France, Germany, and Spain, and were collected into congregations, and became very formidable. To the older Sects new ones were added; and all of them, how discordant soever in other opinions, were unanimous in asserting that the vulgar Religion was absolutely false, and that the Popes usurped a most unrighteous dominion over the Church, and over the Gospel. There were no small number of Nobles who listened very willingly and favourably to these new Preachers inveighing against the power, wealth, the

and wickedness of the Pontifs and of the whole Hierarchy, and confuting their claims and their practices by the testimony of the Sacred Books. There was therefore need of new and extraordinary assistances to crush and extirpate so numerous and so dangerous enemies. Inquisitors were appointed for that purpose, and that formidable Tribunal was erected, which brought back multitudes of Heretics to the bosom of the Church, and destroyed as many by fire and faggot ^m."

The Abbots in these days were very rich; nor did they neglect any methods of increasing their wealth and their power, not even the barbarity of breaking Peasants on the wheel, that they might seize on their effects. It was an Abbot of Nienburg who was guilty of this cruelty. He was a most pious Ecclesiastic, for he ordered a Monk to be cast out unburied upon a dunghill, because he died possessed of nineteen crowns; adding, to justify his severity,

^m Mosheim, p. 496, &c. 501, &c.

this sentence of Scripture, *Thy money perish with thee.*

It was then an axiom, that the Church abhors the shedding of blood. Therefore Bishops and Archbishops used to go to battle, armed with clubs, and made no scruple to knock down an enemy, and to beat and bruise him to death, though they held it unlawful to run him through with a sword.

These ages of ignorance were golden and happy ages for the Church; and the Prelates abounded in good works; for no man dared to call their actions by any other nameⁿ.



Discourse on the Croisades, by Fleury.

THE Croisades make a considerable part of the History of the Church during the twelfth and thirteenth Centuries, and were one of the principal sources of the alteration of Ecclesiastical

ⁿ Bibl. Univ. i. 96, &c.

Discipline. You have seen the end of them; let us look back to their beginning and their progress.

The origin of Croisades is to be discovered in the Pilgrimages to the holy Land, which became frequent from the reign of Constantine, when the Cross was^o found, and the holy places re-established. Thither they repaired from all Christendom, which was contained pretty nearly within the compass of the Roman Empire, whose vast extent made such voyages easy even from Gaul, Spain, and the remotest provinces. This liberty continued during three hundred years, notwithstanding the fall of the Western Empire, because the kingdoms formed out of its ruins remained Christian, and were peopled with Romans, though made subject to Barbarians. The great change happened not till the seventh century, by the conquests of the Arabian Mahometans separated from us by religion, language, and manners. Yet as they left to their Christian

* He should have said, *was not found.*

subjects the free exercise of their religion, they permitted pilgrimages, and even they themselves went to visit Jerusalem, which they called the Holy House, and for which they have a singular veneration.

The Christians therefore of the West continued, under the domination of the Mahometans, to visit the holy places of Palæstine, though with more difficulty than in the preceding ages; and we have some relations of their voyages, as of that of Arculphus a French Bishop, written by an Irish Abbot towards the end of the seventh century. These pilgrims, beholding the servitude under which the Eastern Christians groaned, made without question doleful representations of it, and of the disgrace to Christianity that the holy places should be in the hands of Infidels. Yet many centuries elapsed before any attempt was made to deliver them.

It is true that the Greek Emperors were almost always at war with the Mahometans; but it was rather for the defence

defence of their frontiers than for the conquest of Jerusalem. The Goths, the Franks, the Lombards, and other nations which ruled the West, were for a long time occupied in the wars which they waged with one another and with the Greeks. Afterwards they found themselves obliged to fight against those Mahometans who conquered Spain, penetrated into France, and established themselves in Sicily, whence they made descents into Italy, even to the gates of Rome. Far from projecting to cross the seas, and to carry the war over to them, the Christians reckoned it a sufficient happiness to repulse them. Charlemain, so powerful, so warlike, so zealous for religion, employed his arms against the Saracens only on the frontiers of Spain, and so little thought of attacking them in the East, that he always preserved alliance and friendship with the Calif Aaron, who sent to this Prince the key of the holy Sepulcre, as a token of liberty for pilgrimages. The voyage of Charlemain to the holy land

is a romance invented since the Croiades.

It was not till the end of the eleventh century that the Christians of the West united in a common enterprise against the enemies of our religion ; and Pope Gregory VII, a man of spirit, and capable of vast designs, was the first mover of it. He was much affected with the lamentable relations which he received of the state of the Eastern Christians oppressed by the Infidels, particularly by the Turks who came to settle in Asia. He had excited the Princes of the West to take up arms against them ; he was sure of fifty thousand men, whom he himself intended to head, as he testifies in a letter to the Emperor Henry. But more pressing affairs at home hindered Gregory from executing his project, which was not accomplished till twenty years after by Urban II. Some preludes there had been, and the Pilgrims travelled to the holy land in great numbers, and well armed ; of which the seven thousand
Germans

Germans were a remarkable instance, who performed this voyage in the year 1064, and defended themselves valiantly against the Arabian robbers. Such a caravan was a little army, and the Croisiez were only a collection of Pilgrims.

Besides the principal motives of opening a free passage for pilgrimages, and succouring the Christians of the East, I am persuaded that Gregory and Urban had also a view to secure Italy from the insults of the Saracens, and to weaken their power in Spain, where it continued indeed to decline after the Croisades. Besides this, Urban in one of his Sermons gives intimations of another important design, which was to extinguish the several wars which had raged in the West for more than two hundred years, and kept the Lords continually in arms against each other. The Croisade answered this design more effectually than *the Truce of God*, as it was called, established by many Councils about the year 1040, to suspend for
certain

certain days in the week all acts of hostility. The Croisade turned against the Infidels those forces which the Christians employed to destroy one another; it enfeebled the Nobles, engaging them in immense expences, by which means the Sovereign Princes grew more powerful, and by degrees re-established their authority.

I find not that in those days it was ever made a question whether this war were just. The Christians of the East and West all took it for granted. Yet a difference of religion cannot be a sufficient cause of war; and Thomas Aquinas, writing in the thirteenth century when the Croisades were still frequent, says, that it is not lawful to compel Infidels to embrace the faith, but only that Believers may employ force, when they are able, to hinder Infidels from doing hurt to religion either by persuasion or by open persecution. And it is for this reason, says he, that Christians often wage war with Infidels, not to constrain them to believe, but to restrain them
from

from opposing any obstacles to the faith. On these principles Christian Princes in all times have thought that they had a right to protect foreign Christians oppressed by their Sovereigns. Thus Theodosius the younger refused to surrender up to the Persian king the Persian Christians who had taken refuge amongst the Romans, and proclaimed war against him, to compel him to cease the persecution. The same was the occasion of the first Croisade. The Emperor of Constantinople implored the succour of the Latins against the formidable power of the Turks; and the Christians of the East besought it still more earnestly by the complaining letters of the Patriarch of Jerusalem, which Peter the Hermit brought to Pope Urban.

It must also be acknowledged that the hatred which the Christians bore to the Mahometans had a great share in the design of the Croisade. The Christians considered them as a cursed nation, declared enemies to true religion, and
professing

professing to establish their own in all places by force of arms. Their own Christian subjects could not bear to obey them. John Damascene, living in the capital of their empire a century after their conquests, addresseth himself to Leo Isaurus as to his true and lawful Sovereign. Fifty years after, the Patriarchs of the East, in their letters to the seventh General Council, acknowledge the Greek Emperors for their masters, and represent the Mahometan Princes as execrable tyrants. Nor were the Christians of Spain reconciled to them in the middle of the ninth century, as we see in Eulogius of Corduba. I confess that I discern not here the first spirit of Christianity, nor that perfect submission to Pagan Emperors during three hundred years of persecution. But these are certain facts; and the Christian Princes did not treat the Mahometans taken in war like other enemies, as it appears from those whom the Emperor Basilus Macedo caused to be flayed alive, and from those whom
the

the Popes Leo IV. John VII. and Benedict VIII. put to death.

The Croisade was not appointed by Pope Urban alone, but by the Council of Clermont consisting of more than two hundred Bishops assembled for all the West; and so persuaded were all persons of *the will of God* concurring in this enterprize, that it was made the shout for battle. To bring it into execution, and to put the people in motion, the grand resort was a plenary Indulgence, which was then first introduced. The Church in all times had left a discretionary power to the Bishops to remit part of the Canonical penance, according to the fervour of the penitent, or to other circumstances; but till now it had never been seen that in favour of one single work the sinner was discharged from all temporary punishments which were due to the divine justice. Nothing less than a numerous Council, with a Pope presiding in person, could authorize such an alteration in the system of penance;
and

398 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

and doubtless it was thought to be grounded on sufficient reasons. For more than two hundred years, the Bishops had found it very difficult to make sinners submit to the Canonical penances, which indeed had been rendered impracticable by multiplying them according to the number of transgressions; whence came the invention of Commutations, and of buying off the penances of many years in a few days. And amongst these commutations it had been for a long time a practice to enjoin pilgrimages to Rome, to Compostella, or to Jerusalem; to which pilgrimages the Croisade now added the perils of war. It was thought therefore that such a penance as this was equivalent to the fastings, prayers, and almsgivings, which each penitent could perform in particular, and that it would be more useful to the Church, and not less agreeable to God.

This Indulgence served the Croisiez in lieu of pay; and I find not in the first voyages any raising of Tenths to defray the
the

the troops. The first was the Saladine Tenth, levied on account of the third Croisade. But as indulgences will not feed the body, it was supposed that the Croisez would subsist at their own expence, or by the assistance of the rich and the charitable; and this great expence attending so long a voyage was to be accounted as a considerable part of the penance. Even on these terms the Indulgence was accepted with joy, as a great favour.

The Nobles, who knew themselves for the most part guilty of many crimes, and amongst others of pillaging the Churches, and robbing the poor, thought it a favour to have no other penance imposed upon them than their own common occupation and practice, which was fighting, together with the prospect, if they fell in battle, to be ranked amongst the Martyrs. Before this time, one part of penance had been, neither to bear arms, nor to go on horseback. Now both the one and the other was not only permitted but
I required;

required; so that the Croisez changed only the object of their enterprises, without changing in the least their way of life. The Nobles drew after them the populace, most of whom were vassals confined to the lands, and entirely dependent on their Lords; and doubtless chose rather to follow them in this voyage than to sit at home confined to agriculture or to laborious trades. Thus were formed those immense armies which we find in History. To march towards the holy land was thought sufficient to secure the salvation of the traveller.

The Ecclesiastics took up the Cross as well as others; but it should have been from a different motive, namely to instruct the Croisez, to comfort them, to administer the Sacraments to them, and not to buy off their own penances; for, according to the true rules, canonical penances were not established for the Clergy. When they had transgressed, it was thought sufficient, according to the Aposto-
lical

lical Canon, to depose them, and reduce them to the state of Laymen, without adding any other correction, that they might not be punished twice for one fault. However it may be that in the eleventh century this distinction was not accurately considered; and the Ecclesiastics, too many of whom were guilty, proposed, as well as the Laity did, to expiate their crimes by the Croisade. What is certain is, that they thought it lawful to bear arms, and make use of them in this as well as in other wars against Infidels. You have seen the Bishops of Hungary armed against the Tartars, when these ravaged their kingdom in the year 1241. The Prelates of the fifth century did not act thus. St. Leo the Pope, and St. Lupus Bishop of Troyes stopped Attila by no other weapons than prayers and arguments; and they, who could not pacify these Barbarians by meekness and mildness, suffered themselves to be massacred; and the Church approved their conduct so much as to rank them amongst the Martyrs.

Even the Monks and their Abbots lifted themselves in these expeditions, although this military sort of devotion led them off more than other men from their own vocation, which was silence and solitude. I have mentioned in its proper place the answer of St. Gregory Nyssen to a Solitaire of Cappadocia who consulted him about a voyage to Jerusalem. Gregory would not give him leave, although that was only a mere pilgrimage. You have seen how St. Bernard reproached an Abbot for entering into the Croisade, and how he himself absolutely refused to head the second Croisade. Yet at the Croisade in the time of Innocent III, we find there Abbots even of the Cistercian Order. Their essential duties suffered by it; the Monastery was not the better governed for it; and at their return neither they nor their companions the Monks brought back with them a spirit of more regularity. The same may be proportionably said of the Bishops and of their Clergy.

When

When the armies were assembled and began to march in the first Croisade, the event did not answer the intentions of Urban and of the Council of Clermont. In those times little discipline was observed in armies, and still less amongst that of the Croisez, composed of volunteers of diverse nations, and led by Chiefs independent one of another, with none who had the supreme command, unless the Pope's Legate, and he a person by no means capable of governing such troops. Accordingly the Pilgrims did not forbear from acts of hostility till they should enter into the lands of the Infidels. In their passage they ravaged and pillaged the Hungarians, Bohemians, and Greeks, though Christians, and cut to pieces all who opposed their violence. On these occasions so many of them perished, that their numbers were considerably diminished when they arrived at Asia. The Emperor Alexis, who then reigned, had been engaged in great contentions with Robert Guichard Duke of Apulia, and

had been worsted. So that seeing Boëmond the son of Robert in the midst of Greece, and at the head of a formidable army, he gave himself for lost, not doubting but that this pretended Pilgrim wanted his crown. It is no wonder that he did the Croisez all the mischief that lay in his power; and, being inferior in strength, had recourse to artifice, according to the genius of his nation.

The Croisez were ill instructed concerning the state of the countries which they went to attack. This appears from the relations of their exploits, in which the names of people, regions, and princes are strangely disfigured. They knew not the roads, and were reduced to take up guides on the spot, that is, to expose themselves to the mercy of their enemies, who often misled them on purpose, and caused them to perish before they could strike a blow; as it happened in the second Croisade. Even in the first voyage they weakened their own hands by dividing

viding their troops to secure diverse conquests, as Nicæa, Antioch, Edeffa, instead of reserving their strength for Jerusalem, which was the aim of their enterprize. But the different Chiefs had their own private views, and the ablest of them all was Boemond the Norman, who got Antioch for himself, much more solicitous, as far as we can judge of him, to make his own fortune, than to do any service to religion.

At last they arrived at Jerusalem, besieged it, and took it by a kind of miracle; for it was not to be expected that amidst such obstacles an enterprize so ill conducted should have an happy conclusion. Perhaps God thought proper to make it prosper for the sake of some well-disposed warriors who acted uprightly and by a spirit of religion, such as Godfrey of Bouillon, whose piety and simplicity is as much extolled as his valour by the Historians of those times. But the Christians corrupted this victory by the ill use they made of

it, putting all the Mahometans to the sword, and filling Jerufalem with blood. Could they hope to exterminate and abolish this religion and its great empire which extended itself from Spain to the Indies? And what Idea of the Christian Religion did it give to the Infidels? Would it not have been more conformable to the spirit of the Gospel to treat them with kindness and humanity, and to be contented with securing by this conquest the liberty of pilgrimages to the holy land? By such a behaviour they would have settled the peace of the old Christian inhabitants of that country, and have made the government of the new Rulers more amiable, and have procured the conversion of some Infidels. Saladin when he retook Jerufalem behaved himself in a much more decent manner, and knew how to reproach the Christians with the barbarity of their parents.

But after all, what were the fruits of this enterprize, which had shaken and exhausted all Europe? Only the
new

new kingdom of Jerusalem conferred upon the worthy Godfrey, on the refusal of the principal Lords of the Croisade, who having accomplished their vow, were in haste to return to their homes. History will hardly furnish us with a Kingdom smaller in the extent of land, and shorter in duration; for it lasted only eighty years, and comprised no more than Jerusalem and a few neighbouring villages, and even those inhabited by Mahometans, or by Christian natives who had no affection for the Franks. Thus the new King had in reality no other subjects than the small remainder of the Croisez, that is, three hundred horse, and two thousand foot. Such was this poor conquest, so vaunted by Historians and Poets! and strange it is that the Christians persevered for two hundred years in the design of preserving or regaining it.

But it was because the Popes, and they who by their command preached

the Croisade, ceased not to represent it to the nobility and the populace as the Cause of God, and the best method to secure their own salvation. We must, said they, revenge the disgrace of Jesus Christ, and wrest out of infidel hands that land which is his heritage, acquired by the price of his blood, and promised by him to his people. He gave his life for you: is it not just that you should give yours for him? Can you sit at rest in your houses, whilst his enemies blaspheme his holy name, profane his temple, and the places which he honoured with his presence, by the abominable worship of Mahometans, who insult the Faithful that have not the courage to eject them? What will you answer to God at the day of judgment, when he will reproach you for having preferred your repose and your pleasures to his glory, and for having slighted so easy a method of expiating your sins and gaining the crown of martyrdom? This is what the Popes in their Letters and the

the Preachers in their sermons inculcated with the most pathetic expressions.

In our days, when the spirits of men are no longer inflamed with the subject, and we consider it in a cool temper, we can discern in these discourses neither solidity, nor even the appearance of reason. It was said that the disgrace of Jesus Christ ought to be revenged. But what he accounts an injury, and what truly dishonours him, is the debauched life of wicked Christians, and such were most of the Croisez, which is far more odious to him than the profanation of things inanimate, of buildings consecrated to his name, and of places which bring to our mind what he suffered for us. What respect soever may be due to holy places, his religion is not connected with them. He hath declared this himself, when he said that the time was coming when God should be worshiped neither in Samaria, nor in Jerusalem, but in all and in any places, in spirit and in truth.

truth. And it was to undeceive the Jews and remove their attachment to one spot, and to an house made by men that he caused Jerusalem to be destroyed, and never suffered the temple to be rebuilt.

It is mere equivocation to call Palestine the Lord's heritage, and the land promised to his people. These expressions belong to the Old Testament in the proper and literal sense, and can be applied to the New only in a figurative sense. The heritage which Christ purchased with his blood, is his Church collected from all nations, and the land which he hath promised is the heavenly country. We ought to be ready to give up our life for him; but that is done by suffering all sorts of oppressions and persecutions, and even death, rather than to renounce him and lose his favour. He hath not commanded us to expose our lives by attacking Infidels sword in hand; and if it be lawful to give the title of

Martyrs

Martyrs to those who are slain fighting with Unbelievers, it must be in a purely religious war. More than five hundred years were elapsed since the Mahometans had conquered Palæstine when the first Croisade was undertaken, and we see not that Christianity in general had suffered any great detriment by their conquest, or that it grew more flourishing since. In a word, all the heavy censures bestowed on those Princes who refused to go to the holy War fell as much upon their predecessors, and upon other Princes, who yet had been most zealous in the cause of religion.

The second Croisade conducted by Louis the Young with Conrad King of Germany was entirely unsuccessful; and St. Bernard who had preached it was reduced to plead for himself against the reproaches which his doctrine had brought upon him. The army of Conrad perished in Natolia, without striking a blow, by the treachery of the Greeks; and

one cannot wonder enough at the simplicity of this Prince, to trust himself to the Emperor Manuel, after the experience of the first Croisade, when Manuel's ancestor Alexis had used all his endeavours to blast the enterprize. The interval between the one and the other was only of fifty years, and the same causes of distrust still subsisted. The Greeks were always persuaded that the Latins wanted to take possession of their empire; and the event, fifty years after, in the fourth Croisade, justified their suspicions too fully.

I speak of the enterprize in which the French, instigated by the Venetians, went first to attack Zara in Dalmatia, and then Constantinople, to re-establish the young Emperor Alexis, of which city they made themselves masters, under the pretence of punishing Murzuflus for his disloyalty to this young Prince; for this was the motive which the Bishops, their conduc-

tors, proposed to them, namely, that persons who had committed such murders as Murzuflus, had no right to possess their dominions; and so blind were the Princes of the Croisez as not to discern the dangerous consequences which might be drawn against themselves by virtue of this false maxim. Innocent III. at first used his utmost efforts to divert the Croisez from this project. He represented to them that they had taken arms against Infidels, not against Christians, and that it belonged not to them to revenge injuries done to the Emperor Isaac, or to his son Alexis. To these remonstrances he added his censures, and the Croisez were excommunicated for this undertaking.

But at length he was dazzled by the success; and seeing the Latins masters of Constantinople as it were by a miracle, he imagined that God had declared himself for them. Two specious reasons imposed upon him; the facility of
suc-

414 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

succouring the holy land, and the hopes of re-uniting the Greek to the Latin Church. It was said; The Greeks are they who above all have prevented the good effects of the Croisades by their perfidy. When we are masters of the Empire, the passage to the holy land will be easy and safe, and we shall advance step by step to its assistance. It was also urged; The Greeks are obstinate schismatics, children of the Church who have rebelled against their Mother since many ages, and who deserve to be scourged for it. If the fear of our arms recalls them to their duty, so much the better; if not, we must extirpate them, and re-people the country with Catholics. But in both these reasonings they were widely mistaken. The conquest of Constantinople drew on the loss of the holy land, and made the Schism of the Greeks irreconcilable. This wants to be explained.

First then; the preservation of Constantinople became a new object of the Croisez,

Croisez, and divided the forces of the Pilgrims, already too small to sustain the war in Syria, particularly after the loss of Jerusalem. Yet the Croisez repaired more willingly to Romania, attracted by the proximity and by the goodness of the country. Thither they went in droves, and thence sprang up new states, besides the Empire, as a kingdom of Thessalonica, and a principality of Achaia. There also were found new enemies to encounter, besides the Greeks, as the Bulgarians, Valachians, Comanians, and Hungarians. Thus the Latins, being established in Romania, had work enough at home, without troubling themselves about the holy land. They were eternally crying out for succours, and attracting as many of the Croisez as they could. But, in spite of all their efforts, the conquest of Constantinople was still more short-lived than that of Jerusalem. The Latins did not preserve it sixty years; and, which added to these evils, this conquest, with the wars which
it

it produced, shook the Greek Empire to such a degree, that it gave occasion to the Turks to overthrow it entirely two hundred years afterwards; and as to the Schism of the Greeks, it was so far from extinguishing, that it inflamed and made it irreconcilable.

The Indulgence granted to the Croisade, having been extended to the preservation of the Empire of Romania against the Schismatical Greeks, was soon applied to all the wars which appeared of importance to religion. The Popes granted the same Indulgence to the Spaniards who fought against the Moors, and to strangers who joined them as auxiliaries; and indeed it tended to deliver Christians from the domination of Infidels, and to diminish the power of the latter. By these means were accomplished the conquests of James king of Arragon, and of St. Ferdinand king of Castille, carried on so far by their successors, that at last they expelled all the Moors from Spain. At the same time the Croisade was
preached

preached in Germany against the Pagans of Prussia, Livonia, and the neighbouring regions, both to hinder them from vexing the new Christians, and to incline them to receive the Gospel themselves. An additional object of the Croisade was the destruction of Heretics, such as the Albigenſes in France, and others in Germany. Laſtly it was preached againſt Princes who were excommunicated for diſobeying the Church, as the Emperor Frederic II. and his ſon. And becauſe the Popes treated as enemies to the Church all thoſe with whom they had any diſputes even about their temporal intereſts, they had alſo recourſe to Croiſades on theſe occaſions, as to the laſt reſort againſt reſiſting Powers.

Now theſe Croiſades, grown ſo numerous, were hurtful one to the other. The Croiſez ſplit into ſo many different bodies could not perform great exploits; and this was the principal cauſe of the loſs of the holy land. The Spaniards and Germans choſe rather to gain the

418 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

Indulgence by staying at home; the Popes had more at heart the preservation of their own temporalities in Italy than the kingdom of Jerusalem, and the destruction of Frederic and his son than that of the Sultans of Ægypt and Syria. Thus the succours expected by the Christians of the East were diverted or retarded, and the multitude of the Croisades caused that enterprize to miscarry which had been their first and only view. The Croisades were grown objects of contempt, and the preachers of them were no longer followed and regarded. It became necessary to grant an Indulgence of some days, and even of some years, to those who would deign to be present at those sermons.

The extension of the plenary Indulgence was also hurtful to the Croisade. At first it was only granted to those who took up arms and went in person. Afterwards it was thought right not to deprive those of it, who, being unable themselves to serve, contributed to the success of the enterprize, as old men, sickly

sickly persons, and women, who gave their substance for the maintenance of the army. It was extended to all those who were promoters of this holy cause, in proportion to the sum which they gave, either during their life, or by their testament; and the Croisez who could not accomplish their vow, on account of some obstacle arising afterwards, were dispensed from it on the payment of a certain gift; and this sometimes upon slender excuses. All these contributions amounted to a vast sum, which was collected by the Pope's Commissaries, Templars, Mendicants, or others who were sometimes accused of being faithless stewards.

But these voluntary collections were casual, and experience shewed that a certain fund was necessary for the maintenance of the Croisez, most of whom were not able to serve at their own expence. Thence they proceeded to imposts and taxes; and as the subject of this war was the defence of religion, it was judged lawful to make free with

consecrated goods, that is, with Ecclesiastical revenues. The first imposition of this kind was the Saladine Tenth, on occasion of the loss of Jerusalem. Sensible men foresaw the consequences, and Peter of Blois opposed this innovation, so prejudicial to the liberties of the Clergy, and the immunity of Ecclesiastical revenues. And indeed this example, begun in the third Croisade, was followed in all the succeeding ones, not only in those for the holy land, but for any cause whatsoever; and the Popes, pretending to a right to dispose of Ecclesiastical goods, required of the Clergy a twentieth, sometimes a tenth, sometimes even a fifth of their revenues, either for the Croisade, or for the particular affairs of Rome; and also sometimes they gave a part of those taxes to those Kings who came into their interests. The French and the English Clergy made loud complaints on this account.

These levies were only a small part of the temporal business which the Croisades

fades brought upon the Pope, who was always the First Mover ; for these wars, though undertaken upon a religious motive, were to be conducted like other wars. It was needful to raise troops, to furnish them with necessaries, to give them commanders, to send them forth, to fix their route by land, and their embarkation when they chose to go by sea, to have fortified places, stores, and magazines, and to make all other suitable preparations. It was the Pope who regulated the enterprizes, disposed of the conquests, and ratified the treaties of peace or of truce ; and as he could not march himself at the head of the Croisiez, there was always in each army a Legate, usually a Cardinal, furnished with most ample provisions, and having authority over the Chiefs, and a kind of Generalissimo. But the Pope who gave him this power could not along with it give him the capacity requisite in a Commander ; and so it often happened that the military officers were of a different opinion from the Legate con-

cerning the conduct of the war; and this produced divisions amongst them, as it did between the Legate Pelagius and the King of Jerusalem.

Frequently it happened that a Prince, after having taken the Cross and an oath to set out at a certain time, delayed his voyage, either through fickleness and change of mind, or on account of more pressing affairs at home, by a revolt of his subjects, or by the invasion of a neighbouring Prince. Then recourse was to be had to the Pope, to obtain a dispensation from the oath, and an allowance of longer time. If the Pope did not approve the excuses, he was not sparing of his Ecclesiastical censures. Such was the Source of the famous contest between Gregory IX. and the Emperor Frederic II. which brought on the ruin of that Prince and of his house, and plunged Germany into an anarchy of thirty years, and introduced a division in Italy from which it hath not as yet recovered itself. Such was also the cause of the quarrel

quarrel of Boniface VIII. and Philip Le Bel, which was carried to the last extremities, and the end of which was so fatal to that Pontif.

The Prince used to say on those occasions ; I am ready to accomplish my vow ; but I must first provide for the safety of my kingdom, subdue my rebellious subjects, or disarm a neighbouring Prince, who will take advantage of my absence. The Pope replied ; The Croisade is the common cause of religion, to which all private and personal interests must yield. Put your cause into my hands, as to a judge and an arbitrator, and I will do you justice. As a Croisé, you are under the special protection of the Roman Church ; whosoever attacks you during your absence shall be declared her enemy.

The new Lords established in the East, as the King of Jerusalem, the Prince of Antioch, the Count of Tripoli, gave the Pope the more occupation, as their conduct towards the Infidels and their contentions amongst

themselves directly affected the preservation of the holy land. Add to this the affairs of the Latin Bishops established in those regions after the conquest, and you will find that the Croisade alone and its consequences involved the Popes in more business than fell to the share of the greatest Monarchs. So much did they set their hearts upon the affairs of the holy land, that several of them died of mere vexation at the bad event of this enterprize.

The Latin Clergy of the East deserve a particular notice. Presently after the conquest of Antioch, Jerusalem, and other cities, they established in them Latin Patriarchs and Prelates; and in like manner, after the conquest of Constantinople. True it is that the diversity of language and of rituals obliged the Latins to have Clergy of their own: but I know not whether it was proper to be so hasty in multiplying Prelates for the sake of the Latins, who were few in number. For example, could not the Patriarch of Jerusalem

lem have very easily governed the Church of Bethlehem, which lay only two leagues off? The Croisez went to succour the ancient Christians, Syrians, Armenians, and others, who all had their own Bishops established by a long succession; yet, in our histories I find little mention made of these poor Christians and of their Bishops, except the complaints which they made of being ill used by the Latins. Thus under the pretence of delivering them from the Mahometans, they only laid them under a new slavery.

The first care of these Latin Bishops was to establish the Temporalities of their Sees, and to acquire Seignories, Cities, and Castles, after the examples which they had seen at home, and to be extremely careful in preserving them. Accordingly, scarcely were they established, when they began to have violent contests with the Nobles; as the Patriarch of Jerusalem had with the King, for the dominion of the City. Nor had they less altercation for their
spiritual

426 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

spiritual jurisdiction, both amongst themselves, and with the Knights of the Military Orders equally jealous of their privileges. To settle these litigated points, recourse was to be had to Rome, whither the Patriarchs themselves were often obliged to go in person. What dissipation for these Prelates! and what additional burden of affairs for the Pope! But what scandal given to the ancient Christians of the East, and to the Infidels! According to the true Spirit of the Gospel, the Latin Clergy ought to have applied themselves principally to the instruction and amendment of the Croisez, and to form as it were a new Christianity, as near as possible to the purity of the first ages, and capable of attracting by good examples the Infidels with whom they were surrounded. Then the Clergy might have laboured for the re-union of Heretics and Schismatics, and for the conversion of the Infidels; and this was the method to make the Croisade turn to good account. But our Latin Ecclesiastics were not knowing enough to have views so pure
and

and so sublime ; they were in Palestine like those in Europe, or rather still more ignorant, and still more dissolute.

After the loss of Jerusalem the Patriarch, as well as the King, retired to the city of Acre, where he resided till the total loss of the holy land ; and though his Patriarchate was only titular, there was reason to retain it so long as any hopes remained of recovering Jerusalem. The same may be said of the Patriarch of Antioch, and of Constantinople, and of other Latin Bishops of Greece and of the East. But since the Croisades are ceased, and no rational hope subsists of re-establishing these Prelates in their Churches, it might have been better to have ceased from giving them successors, and perpetuating those empty titles ; and the more so, because this procedure makes the Greeks and other Schismatics still less disposed to a re-union with the Church, whilst they see the Court of Rome full of these Bishops *in partibus*, in employments little answerable to their dignity.

Next

Next to the Clergy, let us consider the Military Orders, a kind of *Religious* persons unknown to antiquity. Until the twelfth century, it was thought enough to account the profession of arms permitted to Christians, and compatible with salvation: it was not yet contrived to make it a state of perfection, and to join to it the three vows essential to a Religious life. And in truth, the observation of these vows requires great precautions against the ordinary temptations; it requires solitude, or at least, retirement, to avoid the occasions of sin; recollection and meditation on religious truths; and frequent prayer, to acquire tranquillity of mind, and purity of heart. Now it seems very difficult to join these practices with a military life, full of action, and continually exposed to the most dangerous temptations, or at least, to the most violent passions.

For these reasons Warriors would have more need than other men to cultivate

tivate their minds by reading, conversation, and wise reflections. As we suppose them bold and brave, a right use of their reason is more necessary for them than for others, that they may employ their courage in a proper manner, and keep it within just bounds. Valour, by itself, only makes men brutal; and reason, by itself, makes them not courageous. They want both valour and reason. Now our old Knights had never studied, and most of them could not read; so that the common prayers of the Templars consisted only in assisting at the office which was sung by the Clerks. I should also much doubt whether they were sufficiently guarded against the temptations inseparable from the exercise of arms, and in the midst of battle could preserve such an even temper as not to be carried away by emotions of wrath and malice, by desire of revenge, and sentiments not conformable to humanity and justice. According to the ancient discipline of the Church, some sort of penance was required of those who had shed blood
even

even in the justest wars; and we find some remains of this discipline in the ninth century.

I am willing to suppose that the Templars and other Knights of the Military Orders gave shining examples of virtue in their first zeal. But it must be confessed that they soon degenerated, and that heavy complaints were made of them, even in the twelfth century, not long after their institution. They abused their privileges, extending them beyond all bounds, despising the Bishops, from whose jurisdiction they were exempt, and even obeying the Pope no farther than it pleased them. They kept not their treaties with Infidels, and sometimes entered into schemes with them for the destruction of Christians. Many of them led a corrupt and scandalous life. In fine, the crimes of the Templars were carried to such an excess, that it became needful to abolish their Order, at the General Council of Vienne, before two hundred years were elapsed from their establishment;

ment; and the facts of which they stand accused are so atrocious, that we cannot read them without horror, and can scarcely believe them, though proved by authentic procedures.

As to the Military Orders which still subsist, I reverence the authority of the Church which hath approved them, and the virtues of many particular persons in each of them. We have in our days known such amongst the Knights of Malta. But I leave it to the conscience of each individual, to examine whether he lives like a truly *Religious* man, and faithfully observes his *Rule*. I particularly intreat all those who embrace this state of life, and all parents who place their children in it, to do it with solemn deliberation, and not to be led merely by the example of others; to consider attentively, before God, what are the obligations incumbent on that state, according to the intention of the Church, and not according to those relaxations which it tolerates; and above all, what are the

432 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

motives for embracing this profession; whether they be to secure eternal life and to aim at Christian perfection, or to participate of the revenues of the Order, and obtain offices of dignity; for it is quire preposterous to make a vow of poverty with a view to acquire riches.

Of all the consequences of the Croisade, that which most affected Religion was the cessation of Canonical penances; I say, the ceasing, not the abrogating; for they were never expressly abolished by any Papal Constitution, or by any Council. Never was this point taken into deliberation; never was it affirmed in the following manner; “We having carefully examined the reasons of this ancient discipline, and the effects which it hath produced, find the inconveniences of it to be greater than the utility; and so, all things duly weighed, we judge it proper henceforth to leave penances to the discretion of Confessors.” I have seen nothing of this kind in the whole course of Ecclesiastical

ecclesiastical History. Canonical penances have insensibly declined by the facility of Bishops and by the hardened stubbornness of sinners, by negligence, and by ignorance; but they received, as we may say, their mortal wound by the Indulgences of the Croisade.

I know that this was not the intention of Pope Urban and of the Council of Clermont. They designed on the contrary to perform two good deeds at a time, to deliver the holy land, and to facilitate penance for an innumerable company of sinners who else would have performed none. This is what St. Bernard expressly says, and what Innocent III. affirms; and they pathetically extol the mercy of God, who in those days had given men an opportunity of being converted, and a new method of satisfying the divine justice. But it is to be feared that they had not enough considered the solid reasons for which the ancient Canons had regulated the times and the exercises of penance. The holy men who established these

434 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

rules had not only in view to punish sinners, but to ascertain their conversion, and to guard against relapses. They began therefore by separating them from the rest of the Faithful, and keeping them confined during the time of their penance, except when they were to assist at divine service, and receive religious instruction. Thus they removed from them the occasions of offending; and these times of silent recollection gave leisure to the Penitents for making serious reflections on the enormity of sin, the rigour of God's justice, eternal punishments, and other formidable truths, which the Priests who had the care of them did not fail to represent in such a manner as to excite in them sentiments of compunction. Then they comforted and encouraged them, and by degrees confirmed in them a resolution to renounce sin for ever, and to lead a new life.

It was not till the eighth century that they introduced pilgrimages in lieu of satisfaction; and they began to ruin penances

penances by such a dissipated life, and by so many occasions of relapses. And yet these particular pilgrimages were less dangerous than the Croisades. A Penitent travelling alone, or with one companion, could observe a certain rule, could fast, or at least live sparingly, and have his hours of meditation and silence, could sing psalms, and occupy himself with pious thoughts, or with edifying conversations; but these religious practices suited not multitudes incorporated into an army. On the contrary, the Croisez, at least, part of them, sought to divert themselves, and had their hounds and their hawks with them. So it appears from the prohibition of such diversions in the second Croisade.

They were, in a word, mere finners, who without change of heart, or antecedent preparation, except perhaps an hasty confession, such as it was, went for the expiation of their sins to expose themselves to the most dangerous temptations of committing new ones.

436 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

Men chosen out from the most virtuous and best confirmed in goodness could hardly have maintained their innocence in such voyages. True it is that some of them prepared themselves seriously for death, by paying their debts, restoring unlawful possessions, and making satisfaction to those whom they had wronged. But it must also be confessed that the Croisade served as a pretext for debtors to defraud their creditors, for malefactors to escape the halter, for prostitutes to carry on their trade with more liberty, and such there were who followed the camp, some of them disguised in mens clothes. In the army of St. Louis, in his quarters, and near his tent, there were places of debauchery; and he was obliged to curb these disorders by exemplary punishments. A Poet of those times relates the story of one who departed to the Croisade, desperately in love with his neighbour's wife, that is, carrying adultery in his breast, and who dying in the voyage charged one of his friends

to

to embalm his heart, and give it to the lady ; which he did. Were not these fruits meet for repentance !

The Croisez who settled in the East after the conquest, far from being converted, corrupted themselves more and more. The heat of the climate and the example of the natives made them effeminate, and excited them to the enjoyment of all kind of voluptuousness, especially in the most fertile regions, and in the delicious valley of Damascus. Their children grew still worse, and formed a new nation called *Pullani*, famous only for its vices, Such was the honour which accrued to Jesus Christ from these most expensive enterprises!

At last Jerusalem and the holy land returned back into Infidel hands ; and four hundred years are elapsed since the Croisades have ceased ; but the Canonical Penances are not returned to us. Whilst the Croisades lasted, they stood in the place of penance, not only for those who voluntarily enlisted them-

438 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

selves, but for all great sinners, to whom the Bishops granted absolution, only on condition that they would serve personally in the holy land, or maintain there a certain number of soldiers. It should seem then that after the end of the Croisades they would have returned to the ancient penances: but the use of them had been interrupted for two hundred years at least, and the penances were become arbitrary. The Bishops entered not into the detail of the administration of the Sacraments; the Mendicant Friars were the more ordinary Ministers, and these itinerant Missionaries could not attend long upon the conduct of a Penitent, to examine the progress and the stability of his conversion, as the regular pastors used to do. But the Friars were obliged to expedite the affairs of these sinners without delay, that they might pass from one to another.

Besides, Morality was discussed in the Schools, as other parts of Theology, more by ratiocination than by authority,

thority, and in a problematical way, by calling in question every thing, even the clearest truths; whence in time proceeded so many decisions of the Casuists remote not only from the purity of the Gospel, but from the dictates of common sense. For in points of this kind what lengths will not those persons run, who use such a licentious way of reasoning? Now the Casuists were more employed in describing the nature of sins than in shewing their remedies. They were principally occupied in deciding which are mortal sins, and in distinguishing to which virtue each sin was opposite, whether to justice, prudence, or temperance. They seem to have studied how to bring down sins to the lowest degree of guilt, and to justify many actions, which the ancients, less subtle but more sincere, judged to be criminal.

Thus the old discipline, by being so neglected, is fallen almost into oblivion, so that none dare to talk of re-establishing it. Yet St. Charles was a good

Catholic, and in his instructions for Confessors he hath inserted an extract from the old Canons to guide them in imposing penances, and to make those penances, as far as it may be, proportionable to the offences. Lastly, the Council of Trent hath ordered that notorious offenders be put to open penance; permitting only the Bishops to dispense with it, when they shall judge it proper.

I have observed, by the way, that one of the objects of the Croisade was the conversion of the Pagans of Livonia, Prussia, and other northern people, which deserves particular reflections. These conversions were begun by the zeal of some Cistercian Monks, and were continued by the Predicant Friars; and so far nothing could be more conformable to the spirit of the Gospel. But as these people were extremely fierce, they who adhered to Paganism, and were the greater number, often insulted the new Christians, who defended themselves sword in hand,
using

using the natural right of repelling force by force, and implored the assistance of the Germans, Poles, and other ancient Christians in the neighbourhood. This was also within the bounds of justice; and this cause of war appeared so lawful, that to support it the better, they instituted Military Orders of the Knights of Christ, and the Brethren of the Sword, reunited since in the Teutonic Knights. The Popes extended the Croisade to this religious war, and annexed the same indulgence to it as to the succour of the holy land.

But these Croisez rested not long on the defensive side; they often attacked the Infidels; and when they had the advantage, the primary condition of peace was, that these Pagans should admit Priests to instruct them, and receive baptism, and build Churches. After this, if they violated the peace, as it often happened, they were treated as rebels and apostates, and it was thought right to compel them by violence to hold what they had once promised;

promised; in which procedure also they followed the doctrine of St. Thomas. Such was the propagation of the faith in those vast provinces; and it must be owned that the practice was not new, and that even in the days of Charlemain compulsion was used in the conversion of the Saxons; and amidst the frequent revolts, the most common method of obtaining pardon was to receive baptism.

And yet St. Thomas, following Antiquity, shews very well that we ought not to compel Infidels to receive the faith, and that though they be conquered and made prisoners, they ought to be left free upon this point. I willingly cite this Doctor, because we cannot have a better witness of the doctrines of his own times. He says then, following and citing St. Augustin, that no one can believe without his inclination, and that the will cannot be constrained; whence it follows that the external profession of Christianity is of no use without the internal persuasion.

It

It is not lawful then to baptize adults without having given them sufficient instruction, and being assured, as far as it possible, of their conviction as to doctrines, and of their conversion as to morals; and thence came that pious discipline of Antiquity, to prepare persons for baptism by previous instruction and probation. Now how could they instruct and prove those Livonians, Prussians and Curlanders, who on the next morning after the loss of a battle came in crouds to baptism, that they might avoid death or bondage? And indeed, as soon as they could shake off the yoke of the victors, they returned to their accustomed life and their ancient superstitions, they expelled or massacred the priests, and pulled down the Churches. Such men are little affected by their own promises or oaths, of which they feel not the force and the consequences: it is the present object only which strikes them. And perhaps this is the cause for which these people were easily afterwards drawn

drawn into heresies. Their religion had never been built upon a solid foundation. To this we might add a more recent example, that of the Moors in Spain.

To return to the Northern Croisades, I am afraid that temporal interest had rather a greater share in them than religious zeal. For the Popes gave the Teutonic Knights the domain and sovereignty of all the lands which they could conquer from the Infidels. I examine not here what right the Pope had, or what need the Knights had to hold their conquests by his donation. I consider only the fact; and I say that these Knights, it is to be feared, were more solicitous about the increase of their domination, than of the Christian faith. I am willing to suppose that the Monks and Friars who preached these Croisades, and instructed the new converts, had an upright intention and an honest zeal; but I meet with grievous complaints against these Knights, that they reduced the new
Christians

Christians to a kind of servitude, and thereby deterred others from embracing the faith; so that their arms were pernicious to the Religion for the sake of which they were taken up. However, from these victories over the Pagans arose the Duchies of Prussia and Cur-land.

The Croisades also for the holy land degenerated by degrees and became mere temporal affairs, of which religion was only the pretext. Besides the conquest of kingdoms and of principalities, these enterprises produced other effects less brilliant but more solid; as the increase of navigation and commerce, which enriched Venice, Genoa, and other maritime cities of Italy. The experience of the first Croisades shewed the inconveniences of long marches by land, of five or six hundred leagues, to gain Constantinople and Natolia. They took the passage by sea, which was by much the shortest; and the Croisez, according to the countries whence they came, embarked in Provence, Catalonia,

lonia, Italy, or Sicily. It became necessary in those parts to multiply buildings and vessels to carry over so many men and horses, along with food and warlike provisions. Thus the navigation of the Mediterranean, which the Greeks and Arabs had possessed for so many ages, fell into the hands of the Franks, and the conquests of the Croisiez secured to them the liberty of commerce for the merchandizes of Greece, Syria, and Ægypt, and consequently of the Indies, which had no other way to enter into Europe. By these means were strengthened and enriched the potent Republics of Genoa, Venice, Pisa, and Florence; for commerce, penetrating beyond the sea-ports, extended itself to the cities in which arts and manufactures flourished.

Now I doubt not but that so powerful an interest conduced to the continuance of the Croisades; and a proof of this may, I think, be seen in the *Treatise of Sanuto* a Venetian writer,

who used his utmost efforts to persuade Pope John XXII. to procure the recovery of the holy land; for it was not as yet despaired of, though indeed no more Croisades were undertaken.

The interest of particular persons was also considerable, on account of the great privileges of the Croisez. They were under the protection of the Church, and secured from the pursuit of their creditors, who could require nothing of them before their return, and even then only the principal without interest or usury. They were a sort of sacred people; excommunication was inflicted on all who should touch their persons or their goods; and as some abused these immunities by detaining the property of others, by obtaining impunity for their past offences, and by committing new crimes, it became needful to provide against these scandalous abuses in several Councils.

The

The last Croisade which was carried into execution was that in which St. Louis died; and the success of it was inconsiderable. But they did not on this account renounce these enterprizes, nor even, upon the loss of the holy land, which happened twenty years after. They continued during the rest of the thirteenth century, and through a good part of the fourteenth, to preach up Croisades for the recovery of Palæstine, and to raise Tenthhs for that purpose, or under that pretence, which were employed in other wars, according to the direction of the Popes, and to the credit which Princes had with the Popes. We have been undeceived on this point for above a century; and no mention is made of fighting the Infidels, except in the wishes of some Writers of more zeal than wisdom, and in the ^m predictions of Poets, when they want to flatter Princes. Men of

^m Alluding perhaps to Boileau's Epistle to Lewis;
Je t'attends dans deux ans aux bords de l'Héllespont. Ep.
 iv. 172.

sense,

sense, instructed by the experience of past ages, and by the reasons which I have touched upon in this Discourse, see plainly that in these enterprises there is more to be lost than gained, both for temporals and for spirituals.

I stop at this last consideration, and observe that Christians ought to apply themselves to the conversion and not to the destruction of Infidels.

True religion should be preserved and extended by the same methods by which it was established, by preaching accompanied with discretion, by the practice of every virtue, and above all by an unwearied patience and perseverance. When it shall please God to add to these the gift of miracles, the progress will be swifter. Machiavel, who observes that unarmed Prophets never were successful, shews both his impiety and his ignorance, since Jesus Christ, the most unarmed of all men, was he whose conquests were the most rapid, and the most solid; such con-

quests, I say, as he aimed at, by gaining the hearts, and changing the dispositions from evil to good; which no other Conqueror besides him ever effected.

War produceth only outward compliance, compelling the conquered to submit to the will of the conqueror, to pay him tribute, and to execute his orders. As to religion, all that is in the power of the Sovereign is, to hinder the public exercise of that which he disapproves, and to cause the external ceremonies of his own to be practised; that is, to punish those who in these points are not conformable to his will. For if they despise temporal punishments, he can go no farther; he hath no direct power over their wills.

We should also quit an opinion which hath been too prevalent for many ages, that a Religion is lost in a country where it hath ceased to be predominant, and supported by the
Temporal

Temporal Powers, as Christianity in Greece and Natolia, and the Catholic Faith in the Northern Regions. It was doubtless to guard us against this error, that God thought fit to form Christianity under Pagan domination, and to strengthen it during three centuries in the midst of the most cruel oppression and persecution. An invincible proof that his religion stands not in need of human support, that he alone upholds it, and that the opposition of earthly powers only serves to confirm and purify his Church.

I return to my point, that we should not endeavour to overset a false religion, or to extend the true one, by arms and violence. It is not the Infidels, but Infidelity, which we must destroy, by preserving the lives of men, and by convincing them of their errors. In a word, the only true method is, to persuade and to convert. I know the common prejudice, that it is impossible to convert Mahometans;

and it is this which induceth the most zealous Missionaries to pass on beyond them, and preach the Gospel in India and China. But I suspect that the foundations of this opinion are not solid. Jesus Christ, commanding his disciples to instruct all nations, hath excepted none; and the ancient prophecies, declaring the conversion of all nations, have made no such distinction. Can it be possible that so many different nations reunited under the religion of Mahomet, and occupying so considerable a part of the earth, should be the only ones excluded from these magnificent promises?

They are not dispersed and wandering Barbarians, like the ancient Scythians, or the present Savages of America. They are men living in civil society, under certain laws, occupied in agriculture, arts, and commerce, and enjoying the use of letters. They are neither Atheists nor Idolaters. On the contrary their religion, false as it is,

is, hath many principles common with the true one, which seem to dispose them to receive it. They believe in one God Almighty, Creator of all, just and merciful; they abhor polytheism and idolatry; they hold the immortality of the soul, a final judgment, an heaven and an hell, Angels good and evil, and even Guardian Angels; they acknowledge an universal deluge; they honour the Patriarch Abraham, as the father and the first author of their religion; they hold Moses and Christ to have been great Prophets sent from God; and the Law and the Gospel to be sacred books. As to their religious practices, they pray five times a day at stated hours. They keep one day of the week as a Feast; they fast one month in every year; they assemble together to hear the instructions of their Doctors; they highly recommend almsgivings; they pray for the dead, and they have their pilgrimages.

But, it is said, they forbid under the most rigorous penalties all endeavours to convert the Mahometans, and they would without mercy put the man to death who should convert one person. Well. But under Decius and Diocletian was it not a capital crime, not only to convert the Pagans, but even to profess Christianity? If the Apostles and their Disciples had been restrained by such prohibitions and by the fear of death, the Gospel would never have been preached. But the Mahometans suffer Christians amongst them, and have always suffered them, so as to leave them the free exercise of their religion, on the payment of a certain tribute. This, it will be replied, is the very thing that hinders the preaching of the Gospel amongst them; for they would exterminate all the poor Christians, if they undertook to convert the Mahometans. This is the most specious objection that I have heard upon the subject; but I question whether it be well-grounded, and whether

ther the Mahometan Princes, when the thing came to be pushed, would be so weak politicians as easily to deprive themselves of so great a part of their subjects. The objection would be stronger if the number of the Christians were not so great, as indeed it is, especially in the conquered countries, as in Greece, where the Christians are far more numerous than the Mahometans.

Now, when I propose the conversion of the latter, I mean that it should be undertaken with the utmost discretion, as it was in the beginning of Christianity. It is not enough to despise danger and death, and to seek it without any profit, as did the Minor Friars at Marocco and at Ceuta.

I could wish therefore that they who should undertake to preach to the Mahometans were first well instructed in the languages there spoken, in the Arabian, which is the language of their religion, and in the Turkish and Per-

456 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

fian; that they had attentively perused their books, and knew their doctrine, their histories, and their fables; in a word, that they had the same helps in this controversy which the Fathers of the Church had in their contests with the old Pagans; that they began by insinuating themselves into their minds with such truths as we are both agreed in, as in the unity and the other attributes of God, and in the principles of morality, as justice, and the love of our neighbour. We should by no means enter too soon into the subject of the Trinity and the Incarnation, against which they are prejudiced. It would be necessary to establish the authority of the Gospel, by removing the notion commonly entertained by them that this Book, though of divine authority, hath been falsified by the Christians. To undeceive them in this point, a good use might be made of the Nestorians and Jacobites, who dwell amongst them, and have been separated from

us two hundred years before the time of Mahomet, and who have preserved the Gospel, and other sacred books, entirely consonant with our copies.

Above all, no railing accusations should be brought against Mahomet, nor should he be spoken of with contempt. The Apostles did not revile the false Gods, or the Ephesian Diana. But after having well established the mission of Jesus Christ, it might be gently insinuated that Mahomet gave no proof of his mission, and that his religion was established by means merely human. Perhaps it would be proper enough to set forth the vices of the first Califs, the Heads of the Church, and a sort of Mahometan Apostles, such as Othman, Omar, Moavia, and others; their debaucheries, their cruelties, their perfidies, and above all, the bloody war which they waged with the family of Ali.

This is an affair of great length, you will say; and even if one could
find

458 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

find well-diposed hearers, much time would be required for discussing these controversies. I own it, and I wish that herein we should imitate wise Antiquity and the discipline of the early ages, when they protracted for a considerable time the instruction of the Catechumens, both for doctrine and manners, and most carefully examined their conversion, before they were admitted to baptism. After all, they who are upon the spot, and employed in the Missions of the Levant, can best judge what is practicable. But even though they should gain only a few Infidels to God, I account that those conversions would be more agreeable to him, and more useful to his Church, than the death of so many millions, whose blood was shed in the Croisades.



FROM the attempts of Papists to convert Infidels nothing very beneficial to Christianity can well be expected; not because the former are always

ways deficient in learning and abilities, but because their own religious scheme labours under insuperable difficulties. Some of them can reason well, and some have written well, upon the evidences of natural and revealed religion. But to make men Christians is the smaller part of their task; they must proceed, and make them members of the Church of Rome, and receivers of her doctrines, some of which are contrary to the testimony of the senses, and abounding with contradictions; so that Reason must be discarded from the Romish System, and a fanatical sort of faith required from the converts.

But that is not all. Suppose that Infidel Princes should by some way or other get an insight into Ecclesiastical History, into the Papal usurpations, the power which the Vicar of Christ claims over all men, both in temporals and spirituals, the use of St. Peter's two swords, the pretensions to Infallibility,

bility, the Extortions, the Indulgences, the Inquisitions, the pious Frauds, the lying Miracles, the Ex-purgatory Indexes, the open Violence, the Interdicts, the Excommunications, the breach of Public Faith, the Massacres of Heretics and Infidels, the absolving Subjects from their Allegiance, the deposing and assassinating of Princes, the disposing of crowns and scepters, and a long catalogue of enormities practised by the Roman Church and its Rulers, it cannot well be supposed that such Princes would be fond of admitting such teachers into their dominions.

But, to say the plain truth, Christians in general seem not to be *perfectly* qualified for this undertaking; nor will be so, till Metaphysical and Scholastical Divinity is either discarded from the Christian System, or at least is allowed not to be essential to Christianity, nor necessary to be received as a condition to Salvation,

“ To know the true state of the Mahometan Religion, a person should have dwelt in the Levant, be a master of the Arabic language, have conversed familiarly with the Mahometan Doctors, and have read books which are seldom seen in Europe. All this is extremely difficult, and few there are who are able or willing to undertake such a task, to inform themselves of the truth, and to apply such knowledge to the conversion of Mahometans. The Missionaries who repair to those regions are more solicitous to gain over Greek Profelytes to the Roman Church, to get alms from the Europeans who go to the Levant, or to carry on some small traffic in those places, than to qualify themselves for converting Infidels. Besides it is dangerous to attempt it, at least in Turkey, where it is not permitted to change one's religion, or to dispute about it. Thus these Missions, so much celebrated, produce almost nothing in the dominions

nions of the Turkish Emperor, and very little elsewhere.

Besides the obstacles already named, there are three more, which are to be found in all erroneous sects, and which hinder the progress of the Gospel. The first is, that the Easterns, and others also, seldom set themselves to examine by Reason the grounds of their religion, and avoid such inquiries either through ignorance or superstition. It is clear that there is no other way of converting Infidels besides that of reasoning; and if they cannot or will not reason, nothing can be accomplished. Of this we see a manifest example in the Jews of Europe. The next impediment is the difficulty which converted Mahometans would find to subsist in the Levant; or in the West, if they should change their abode. If it were permitted to a Mahometan to profess himself a Christian in Turkey, yet he would be exposed to the hatred of all his relations and friends. It is not easy for a man to dwell where he is held in abomination,
and

and still more irksome to transplant himself amongst people whose language and customs are altogether different. The third obstacle is the ignorance and incapacity of the Missionaries, men little qualified to set forth the beauties of Christianity, which they themselves feel not, and who often hold religious opinions which are not one jot better than the errors of the Mahometans.

From these and many other considerations which might be added it appears that the money which devout persons in Europe furnish for the Missions of the Levant serves only to feed the Missionaries, and not to advance the cause of Christianity. It would be much better to send over men, who should travel in those regions as Philosophers, and Students of the Oriental tongues, and who might bring us back good histories and exact descriptions, from which we might receive profit, as we do from Roman and Greek antiquities and histories. This would be an expence better becoming Sovereign Princes

than a thousand other ways that they have of lavishing their treasuresⁿ."

A. 1301. Boniface VIII. quarrelling with Philip Le Bel, said to him in a Letter; We give you to know that you are our subject both in Spirituals and in Temporals. Philip replied; We give your Fool's head to know (*sciat Fatuitas vestra*) that in Temporals we are subject to no person^o.

Petrus Puteanus hath written a Treatise concerning this quarrel between the Pope and the King; and^p Le Clerc hath given us the Life of this Pope, who was a second Hildebrand.

A. 1302. The Greek Empire was attacked by Othman the first Sultan of the Turks.

A. 1300. "When the preceding century was elapsed, Boniface VIII. ~~was~~ established by some religious cere-

ⁿ Bibl. Choif. viii. 401. See also Bibl. Choif. xxv. 380.

^o Bibl. Univ. vi. 226.

^p Bibl. A. M. x. 32.

monies the celebrated year of Jubilee. A rumour had been raised, in the year 1299, amongst the people of Rome, that whosoever on the ensuing year should visit the Temple of St. Peter, might obtain remission of all their sins, and that this blessing and felicity was annexed to every secular year. Boniface ordered inquiry to be made into the truth of this common opinion, and found, from the testimony of many witnesses of undoubted credit, that it was decreed from the most ancient times that they who repaired to St. Peter's Church, with a devout disposition, on the first day of the Secular year, should obtain Indulgences of an hundred years. The Pope therefore, by a Circular Epistle addressed to all Christian people, declared that they who at this time would piously visit the Churches of St. Peter and St. Paul at Rome, confessing their offences, and declaring their sorrow for them, should receive an absolute and plenary remission. The Successors of Boniface not only adorned

this institution with many new rites; but learning by experience how honourable and how lucrative it was to the Church of Rome, brought it within a narrower compass of time; so that now every twenty-fifth year is a year of Jubilee^r."

It is the opinion of Father Pagi, that the Christians imitated in some manner the *Ludi Sæculares* of the old Romans, and sanctified them by religious rites, to allure the Pagans by this compliance in a thing of an indifferent nature. That Rome Christian imitated Rome Pagan in a thousand instances, is evident to the last degree; and it is probable that the Popes had the old Secular Games in view. But that the Jubilee was contrived to allure the Pagans by such a condescension, is an opinion which hath no vouchers amongst ancient writers. The common notion is more probable, that their principal design was to imitate the Jewish years of Jubilee. For Greek and Roman Paga-

Mosheim, p. 542. Bibl. A. & M. x, 79.

nism was utterly extinct in these ages, and there was no occasion or inducement to humour such prejudices.

A. 1306. Philip of France seized on the Jews in his dominions, stripped them of their effects, and sent them away in banishment^s.

At the same time Clemens V. appropriated to himself the revenues of the Ecclesiastical Benefices, great or small, that should become vacant, for two years ensuing, in England; and this was the beginning of the *Annates*^t.

A. 1307. Philip began the persecution of the Templars, who four years after were quite destroyed.

“ The Order of Knights Templars, if we may give credit to their judges, was a society of men, who were insulters and deriders of God, of Christ, and of all laws divine and human. They who were admitted into this Sodality were

^s Fleury, xix. 110.

^t Ibid. 109.

468 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

obliged to renounce Christ, and spit upon his Image, to pay religious adoration to a wooden Head covered with gold, or to a Cat, and to practise Sodomy. If they had any children from their commerce with women, they immediately burnt them, and did other things shocking to be mentioned. That there were in this Family, as in other Religious Orders and Sects, some flagitious and impious men, no one will deny: but that the whole Body was so execrable, is so far from being evident from the judicial processes against them, which are still extant, that the contrary is rather fairly to be collected. If to this we add that the accusations brought against them manifestly contradict each other, and that many of these unhappy men constantly persevered in protesting their innocence under the most cruel tortures, and with their last breath, it will seem highly probable that Philip excited this bloody tragedy, to satisfy his avarice, and to gratify his malice against their Master,

by whom he pretended to have been ill used^u."

This is an honest and candid judgment of the famous case of the Templars; and all reasonable men, who have considered the affair, are, I believe, of the same opinion.

A. 1308. A Sect in Lombardy of persons who called themselves *Apostolical*, and were bitter enemies to the Church of Rome, were destroyed by a Bishop, who headed an army raised for that purpose^x.

A. 1310. The Knights of St. John of Jerufalem took Rhodes, and then were called Rhodians.

A. 1312. Marinus Sanutus, *cognomento Torsellus, Patricius Venetus, Germani cujusdam artificis opera usus, Organa illa pneumatica, quæ hodie usurpantur, Italice Torsellos dicta, primus omnium in Ecclesiam induxit*^y.

^u Mosheim, p. 604.

^x Fleury, xix. 140. Mosheim, p. 556.

^y Wharton, *in* Cave, ii. 15.

A. 1313. The Emperor Henry VII. was poisoned in the Host by a Monk, who was suborned by Pope Clemens V. An Arian Princess had been taken off in the same manner^z.

A. 1320. John XX. was a favourer of the Jews. Many of them were at that time massacred by the Pastoureaux, a sort of Religious Cut-throats, who were themselves destroyed, as they well deserved^a.

John condemned a doctrine maintained by his predecessor Nicholas III. as heretical. But it was still allowed in those times that Popes might err in opinions as well as in facts. Their infallibility was not admitted till a hundred years after into the Schools^b.

Marsilius, a learned Lawyer of Padua, wrote a defence of the Emperor against

^z Act. Erud. v. 311. Wharton, *in Cave*, ii. 11. Sandius, i. 324.

^a Fleury, xix, 307.

^b Ibid. 368.

the Pope, in which he speaks exactly as any Protestant Author would deliver his sentiments.

“ In defending the rights of Princes against Papal usurpations, he went, says ^c Dupin, into the opposite extreme; but he cites many good passages from Fathers, Councils, and Ecclesiastical Authors.”

A. 1326. The Council of Avignon complains that the Clergy were generally hated by the Laity, and censures the profaneness of some reprobates. These, it seems, were men who had been excommunicated, and who knowing that their excommunicators the Priests and Prelates were themselves guilty of fornication, adultery, and other vices, served their Judges in the same manner, and solemnly excommunicated them; using tallow candles instead of wax tapers, and setting some hay and straw on fire ^d.

^c xi. 67.

^d Fleury, xix. 384.

472 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

The proceſſion of the holy Sacrament was introduced, not by public appointment, but by the zeal of the populace^e.

A. 1327. At this time died Nicephorus Calliſtus, an Eccleſiaſtical Hiſtorian^f.

A. 1328. Gulielmus Occamus was a man of conſiderable parts and learning. His Dialogues, and his other works, being greedily read, and tranſmitted to poſterity, did great miſchief to the Papal power^g.

In this century aroſe the Lollards, concerning whom ſee our Hiſtories, and ^h Moſheim.

A. 1333. *Divino tandem favente Numine, melior effulſit lux. Ex Anglis noſtris unicum tantummodo exemplum dabo, ſed πολλῶν ἀνίστατον ἄλλων, virum melioribus literis pro ſorte ſæculi haud vulgariter*

^e Fleury, xix. 356.

^f Cave, *Proleg.* p. xxxvi. Fabricius, *Bibl. Gr.* vi, 139.

^g Moſheim, p. 585.

^h P. 589.

imbutum,

imbutum, egregium plane literarum et literatorum patronum; Ricardum intelligo Buriensem, quem nobilis et opulenta sedes Dunelmensis olim tulit Episcopum, ⁱ Utinam sic semper talem! Vixit is Edvardo tertio, regum nostrorum felicissimo, (cujus pueritiam rexerat, et ad mores Principe dignos formaverat) magnis et Ecclesiæ et Reipublicæ muneribus functus; erat quippe, ut alia mittam, summus Angliæ Cancellarius, magnusque Ærarii Regii Thesaurarius. Quam flagranti vero, et, ut ipsius verba utar, exstatico in literis promovendis ferebatur animo, in Libello suo, quem idcirco Philobiblion, sive De Amore Librorum inscripsit, ipse nos docet. Ab ineunte ætate viros doctrina claros familiares habuit, suavissima eorum consuetudine mirifice delectatus; quos postea etiam in dignitate positus socios sibi adscivit, in hospitio commensales, in itinere comites, in omni fortuna sodales. Impetrata facultate regia, omnes regni biblio-

ⁱ Cave, I suppose, had in view a certain Bishop of Durham, who doubtless was much inferior to our Richard of Bury.

474 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

thecas, tum publicas tum privatas, perlustravit & diligenter excussit. Ab iis quos maximis devinxerat beneficiis nullum gratius ἀντίδωρον offerri potuit, quam si pulverulenti quaterniones, et decrepiti codices donarentur. In plurimis quas apud exteros Principes legationibus in Gallia, Italia, Germania obiit, nunquam non ei curæ fuit suppellectilem librariam augere. Quocumque pedem moveret, omnia librorum armamentaria solerter invisit, et quicquid thesauri literarii reperit, munifica liberalitate redemit. Nec tabernas librarías neglexit, si quid in rem suam inde reportaret. Ex Ordinibus Monasticis, præcipue Prædicatoribus et Minoritis, Monachos selectiores habuit, quos in omnem literati orbis angulum misit, ut melioris notæ codices vel prece vel pretio sibi compararent. In atriis suis ingens semper aderat Antiquariorum, Scriptorum, Colligatorum, Correctorum, et Illuminatorum multitudo, qui libros sua quisque facultate curarent. Et quoniam probe sciret linguarum cognitionem unicam esse ad reseranda scientiarum penetralia clavem, Grammaticam Græcam,
ut

ut et Hebræam adornari curavit, adjunctis aliis, quæ in his linguis excolendis studiosorum usibus inservirent. Antiquos codices emendavit, voces vetustate nimia caligantes congruis interpretationibus elucidavit, veterumque Grammaticorum orthographiam, prosodiam, etymologiam, et diasyntthesin inconcussa sedulitate instauravit. Denique, ne quid deesset, apud se statuit Aulam Publicam in Academia Oxoniensi fundare, redditibus ditare, inque ea Bibliothecam, quam habuit instructissimam, in communem Academicorum usum collocare; ut plures certe libros quam omnes simul istius temporis Angliæ Episcopi possedisse dicitur. Utrumque præstitisse, Collegium nempe Dunelmense a Monachis antea inchoatum perfecisse, prædiisque locupletasse, et bibliothecam suam inibi repossuisse diserte tradunt Annales Oxonienses. Haec Buriensis noster, cujus exemplum haud pari licet passu secuti sunt alii, ex meliore luto habentes præcordia, qui de bonarum artium studiis his temporibus optime meriti sunt. Sed pauci erant, et, Rari nantes in gurgite vasto, &c.^k

^k Cave, *Proleg.* p. 11.

A. 1334. John established the Feast of the holy Trinity, on the first Sunday after Whitsunday¹.

Jacobus Furnerius, being made Pope, took the name of Benedict XII. Historians represent him as a man of probity, and free both from ambition and from covetousness. He saw the disorders of the Church, and used his best endeavours to remove them, and to reform the Monks. He intended to proceed still farther, when Death called him away, in the year 1342. Superstition excepted, which was the common disease of the age, his character is good and fair^m.

Add to him Innocent VI. and Urban V. who were tolerable Popes.

A. 1341. Petrarch was crowned Poet Laureate. In ancient times it had been a custom to crown Poets, who in public Assemblies had carried

¹ Fleury, xix. p. 519.

^m Mosheim, p. 573.

the prize, and obtained the preference. This lasted till about the days of Theodosius; then it ceased; and afterwards revived about the end of the twelfth century, and continued till it was prostituted to such a degree in various courts of Europe, and bestowed upon such miserable Versifiers, that the title became perfectly contemptible and ridiculous ⁿ.

The Quietists, egregious Fanatics, caused great disturbances in Greece, being attacked by Barlaam, and defended by Palamas ^o.

A. 1347. This year gave birth to St. Catharine of Siena, whom even Fleury ^p treats as an Enthusiast.

A permission was granted by our Edward III. to one John Blome, to dig in the Monastery of Glaston, and search for the body of Joseph of Arimathæa,

ⁿ See a Dissertation on the Laureate Poets in the *Mém. de l'Acad.* xv. 235.

^o Mosheim, p. 598.

^p xx. 288.

which

478 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

which lay there, as Blome had learned by a revelation made to him^b.

A. 1373. The Flagellantes appeared again upon the stage; as also an opposite Sect of *Dancers*, who were like the *Convulsionaires* of our times^c.

A. 1378. The grand Schism of the Antipopes lasted fifty one years, from 1378 to 1429.

The Council of Pisa was convened upon this occasion. During this famous Schism there were freer discourses made in public debates, concerning the wickedness of Popes and of Papal usurpations, than could well be expected in such ignorant and bigoted times. It is strange that none of them, having proceeded so far, should have gone farther, and have discerned that a Pope is no creature of God's making. That discovery was reserved for Luther. However, the Schism, together with

^a Bibl. Choif. xxiii. 326

^c Mosheim, p. 603.

the ignorance, insolence, and abandoned profligacy of the Clergy, had one happy effect. It opened the blind eyes of the Laity, and prepared the way for the Reformation. The consummate wickedness of these Antipopes, who were the greatest villains upon earth, as all honest Christians accounted them, and as they themselves used to call one another, and of whom some were guilty of every crime that can be conceived, and Atheists without all peradventure, gave an incurable wound to Popery. Puteanus hath written an account of this Schism; and * Mosheim, and L'Enfant, in his Histories of the three Councils, have treated of it.

A. 1387. Wickliff died about this time. He was the Father of the Lollards, whose tenets, as far as they are opposite to Popery, were nearly the same with those that are now commonly held by the Protestants. He was the first Translator of the New Testa-

ment from the Latin Vulgate into English^t.

A. 1399. A new Sect of Fanatics arose, called *Albi*, or *Fratres Albi*, who presently increased, and seduced great multitudes, and not a few Ecclesiastics. They went about clothed in *white*, men, women, and children, making processions, and professing extraordinary sanctity. But in a short time they were dissipated^u.

In this century flourished Chrysoloras, Petrarch, and Dante, and were restorers of polite literature.

Aristotle's Philosophy was principally cultivated. The Realists and Nominalists were at eternal war, which lasted till the days of Luther, who put an end to it by calling another question.

The Clergy were as wicked as it can possibly be conceived; and Papal tyran-

^t Rapin, i. 479. *l'Enfant, Conc. de Pise*, ii. 45. *de Const.* i. 201. Mosheim, p. 567.

^u *L'Enfant, Conc. de Pise*, i. P. i. 121.

ny began to be roughly shaken with the opposition made by Philip Le Bel^{*}.

A. 1400. A Grand Jubilee was solemnized, a Farce which was invented by Boniface VIII, A. 1300, and which both at first and afterwards, by the grants of Indulgences, proved extremely profitable to the avaricious Popes and Ecclesiastics[†].

The Emperor Manuel came to Rome, to negotiate an union between the Eastern and Western Churches, and, which was his main point, to procure some assistance against his formidable neighbours. It produced no good to the Emperor, but it was of singular benefit to Europe; for the learned men, whom he brought with him, revived in Italy and in other States of Europe a taste for the Belles Lettres[‡].

A. 1401. In the reign of our Henry IV. an order was sent to the Mayor

^{*} Mosheim, p. 568.

[†] L'Enfant *C. de Pise*, i. 124.

[‡] Ibid. 127.

482 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

of London to burn William Salter, an Heretic, that is to say, a Lollard. This is the first Englishman who was put to death for religion ^a.

A. 1408. From the controversial writings of the illustrious John Hufs it appears that he was of singular abilities, and of considerable learning for those times. He had all the qualities requisite for a Reformer, great piety, and undaunted courage. He had also a tincture of fanaticism. He thought himself inspired, and impelled to act as he did; and the warmth of his temper made him break out sometimes into violent invectives. He was manifestly Luther's Forerunner, and preached particularly against Indulgences. Jerom of Prague, his intimate friend and fellow-labourer, is represented by some writers as a man of an impetuous and turbulent spirit.

The heresy for which John Hufs suffered was his censuring the tyranny

^a Bibl. Choif. xxvii. 322.

and debauchery of Ecclesiastics; for in speculative points he was nearly Orthodox, according to the orthodoxy of those days. He defended himself by the example and authority of our illustrious Grossthead. Like Sampson, he flew more at his death than he had done in his life, and his martyrdom was amply revenged by his followers. L'Enfant hath given a large account of him.

A. 1409. At the Council of Pisa was read a Decree of Gregory X. concerning the Procession of the holy Ghost from the Father and the Son, as from one, and not from two Principles. The Greeks had consented to this Article, at the ^b second General Council of Lyon ^c.

A. 1410. Alexander V. gave the consecrated *Golden Rose* to the Marquis of Este. This ceremony was introduced in the eleventh century.

^b A. 1274.

^c L'Enfant, C. de P. T. i. p. ii. 41. 51. 136. 138.

The Pope published at the same time a Letter for the extirpation of Heretics; and one Burgin, of the sect of the Beguards, was burnt.

The Ecclesiastical Canon, which forbids the Clergy to bear arms, was neglected in all places, and particularly in Germany. It is related that a Bishop newly elected at Hildesheim, inquiring after the Library of his predecessors, was conducted to an Arsenal full of all military weapons. These are the books, said they, of which your predecessors made use; and which you must use, to defend your Church against the usurpations of your neighbours^d.

A. 1410. The Jews were cruelly persecuted. History says that many of them were converted by Vincent Ferrer, a famous Preacher^e.

^d L' Enfant.

^e Ibid.

A. 1412.

A. 1412. John Hufs wrote an excellent refutation of the Bull of John XXIII^f.

In a Council held at Rome by this Pope, at the first Session, happened the Adventure of the Owl. After the Mass of the holy Ghost, all being seated, and John sitting on his throne, suddenly a frightful owl came screaming out of his hole, and placed himself just before the Pope, staring earnestly upon him. The arrival of this nocturnal bird in the day time caused many speculations; some took it for an ill omen, and were terrified; others smiled, and whispered to each other that the holy Ghost had assumed a strange form to appear in. As to the Pope, he blushed, and was in a sweat, and arose, and brake up the assembly. But at the next session, the owl took his place again, fixing his eyes upon John, who was more dismayed than before, and

^f L'Enfant, ii. 119. Cave, ii. *Append.* 102. Mosheim, p. 614.

486 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

ordered them to drive away the bird. A pleasant sight it was to behold the Prelates occupied in hunting him; for he would not decamp. At last they killed him, as an incorrigible heretic, by flinging their canes at him^s.

A. 1414. The Lithuanian and Samogite Pagans were converted by their Duke, Ladislas Jagellon^h.

The Council of Constance was in one respect very considerable; for it established the superiority of Councils over the Pope. Several of the Divines who preached at this Council represent all the Fathers and Ecclesiastics, both within and without doors, with very few exceptions, as a collection of most abandoned and profligate villains. Accordingly, these infamous Wretches took due care that there should be in the Church no reformation of manners, or such a pretended reformation as would amount to nothing. See a Sermon which was preached to this As-

^s L'Enfant.

^h Ibid.

sembly in the ⁱ *Amœnitates Literariæ*, and the Preface of L'Enfant to his History.

This Council decided that, although Christ gave the Eucharist in both kinds, yet ought the Communion of only one kind to be preferred; and then burnt John Hufs and Jerom of Prague for maintaining the contrary. The ^k Council of Trent renewed this decree, or rather carried it still farther, absolutely forbidding the cup to be granted to the Laity, on any occasion; notwithstanding the pressing remonstrances of the Emperor, the King of France, the Duke of Bavaria, and many other Princes and States^l.

L'Enfant hath given us the scandalous Decree of this Council of Constance against the safe-conducts granted to Heretics by Sovereign Princes.

It is well known that the Emperor Sigismund basely gave up John Hufs into the hands of the Council; and

ⁱ iii. 40.

^k A. 1562.

^l L'Enfant.

that he blushed on the occasion, when Hufs fixed his eyes steddily upon him. There goes a report that Charles the Fifth, being importuned by Eccius, and other Wretches like him, to arrest Luther, notwithstanding the safe-conduct granted to him, replied, *I will not blush, with my predecessor Sigismund.*

Hufs, alluding to his own name, which signifies a *Goose*, said; *The goose is a tame domestic bird, which goes not far from home, and doth not take an high flight. But other birds will come, who shall soar aloft, and escape the snares of the enemy.*

On these words was probably founded a tradition that Hufs foretold the Reformation accomplished by Luther, and said to his Judges; *To-day you roast a goose: an hundred years hence, will come a white Swan, which you shall not be able to destroy* ^m.

A. 1417. The English Bishops at Constance, in honour to Sigismund,

^m L'Enfant.

caused

caused a pious Tragicomedy to be acted before him on the Birth of Christ, the coming of the Wise Men, and the Slaughter of the Infants. To the English then is due the invention of such Scenical Entertainments in Germany; though others give the honour of it to the famous Reuchlin.

The Sect of the *Flagellantes* made a great stir at this time.

There is a list of the strangers who attended the Council of Constance, as tradesmen, heralds, buffoons, &c. amongst which are seven hundred *Courtesans*; or, as another list hath it, fifteen hundred; which seems to be the more probable account^a.

A certain Priest, who was a Deist, and was brought before his Bishop upon that account, did not dissemble his opinion. But being tortured, he recanted, and declared himself converted to Christianity, and desired to be put into a Monastery. This change was thought

^a L'Enfant, ii. 21. 79. 386.

miraculous

miraculous by some people, who would have had more reason to think it so, if a jail and the rack had not been employed in his conversion°.

A. 1422. Martin V. published a Constitution in favour of the Jews, whom he took under his protection.

° L'Enfant hath made some remarks on the Bohemian *Adamites*; and says;

“ The accounts which we have of the later Heretics come for the most part from the shops of their contemporaries, the Monks, who were most notorious impostors, and so given to lying, that, as the Benedictin Thomas of Walsingham observes, it was universally allowed to be a conclusive argument; *The man is a Monk; Ergo, he is a liar.*”

See also Mosheim†.

° L'Enfant, *C. de B.* i. 89.

† Ibid. ii. 304.

• P. 637.

A. 1439.

A. 1439. A pretended Union between the Greeks and Latins was patched up at the Council of Florence^r.

A. 1440. A great contest, whether the doctrines of Plato or of Aristotle were to be preferred, arose amongst the Greek Philosophers, Gemistus Pletho, Gennadius, Gaza, Bessario, &c^s.

I am much afraid that it would be doing no wrong to many of the *Literati* of those days, to suppose that they had no other *esoteric* religion than what they drew from Plato or from Aristotle.

A. 1444. Concerning the famous Æneas Silvius, afterwards Pope Pius II. see ^r L'Enfant, and the "*Amœnitates Literariæ*."

Silvius hath given us a malicious description of the *Taborites*; and yet from this very description it may be col-

^r L'Enfant.

^s Mem. de l'Acad. iv. 455.

^t Conc. de B. ii. 156.

^u i. 267.

lected that they were better Christians than he, whose religion was Italian Politics, and who made no conscience of calumniating, prevaricating, saying, and unsaying.

These Taborites gave a Confession of their faith, at the Synod of Kuttensburg, very much in the Protestant Style, which may be seen in * L'Enfant.

A. 1447. No Protestant Scholar will refuse to pay his respects to the memory of Pope Nicolas V. that friend and patron of letters. No Prince ever had so many books inscribed and dedicated to him. He enriched the Vatican Library with several volumes collected from the remotest parts of the East, and from other regions. He made a present of seven hundred ducats to Phil-
elphus, and proposed to him the most advantageous conditions that were perhaps ever offered to a scholar, if he would come to Rome, and translate Greek books, particularly the Poems of

* ii. 132.

Homer.

Homer. But the death of this excellent Pontiff put an end to that project^y.

A. 1450. *Laudatur ab Historicis Alphonsi Regis invictus et generosus animus; tum in literas earumque cultores excellens amor: cui vicem ii celebrandâ apud posteros illius famâ retulerunt^z.*

A. 1452. Whilst Mahomet II. was besieging Constantinople, of which he soon got possession, the miserable inhabitants were carrying on their religious controversies with the utmost fury, cursing and anathematizing all those who had consented to any union with the Latin Church_a.

When Mahomet had taken the city, he secured the Library of the Greek Emperors, which was preserved by his successors, till it was destroyed by Amurat IV, who began to reign, A. 1623^b.

^y Petavius, i. 494. Mem. de L'Acad. xv. 570, where may be found the Life of Philelphus.

^z Petavius. ^a Ducas, c. 37. ^b Hist. de L'Acad. iv. 522.

The succession of Patriarchs, from the taking of Constantinople down to Cyrillus Lucaris, is given us by Philippus Cyprius^c.

The unfortunate Cyrillus Lucaris was elected A. 1612. This honest Prelate, for opposing the tyranny of the Church of Rome and refusing to submit to the Pope, was slandered and persecuted all his days by the Jesuits, and by the Courts of France and Rome, and at last basely murdered at their instigation^d.

A. 1471. Sixtus IV. erected a famous Bawdy-house at Rome; and the Roman Prostitutes paid his Holiness a weekly tax, which amounted sometimes to twenty thousand ducats a year^e.

A. 1495. This year died John II. King of Portugal, who had the honour to be called *Optimus Princeps*. His Life

^c See Bibl. Univ. vii. 71.

^d Smith, *Miscell. Bibl. Univ.* i. 68. Fabricius, *B. Gr.*

x. 499. Mosheim, p. 917.

^e Corn. Agrippa. Cave, ii. 8. ult. *Append.*

Remarks on Ecclesiastical History. 495

is written by the Marquis D'Allegrette, and an Extract of it is given by^f Le Clerc.

At the end of this century, the Pragmatic Sanction of St. Louis, which had been established A. 1268, and afterwards neglected, was brought again into use, whereby the Pontifical See was much damaged. For the Gallican Church, adhering to the Decrees of the Councils of Constance and Basil, suffered not the Pontifs to proceed beyond the bounds fixed by those Fathers. At the same time indeed the Florentine Council, which yielded an unlimited submission to all the pretensions of the Popes, was received in Italy, and other Western parts; but yet so it was, that by the revival of letters and the knowledge of Christian Antiquity, the System of Apostolical Plenitude and Papal Omnipotence began to decline apace^g.

“ In the Eastern regions, the Christian Religion daily lost ground by means of

^f Bibl. A. & M. ii. 162.

^g Cave, ii. 102. *Append.*

the

496 *Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.*

the Mahometans, both Turks and Tartars. In the Asiatic Tartary and its neighbouring nations, where Christianity once flourished, sordid superstition prevailed; nor were there any traces left of true religion, except in China, where the small remains of Nestorianism cast a feeble light. For still, in this century, the supreme Pontiff of the Nestorians, who resided in Chaldæa, sent some of his Clergy to Cathaya and China, to supply the office of Bishops amongst the Congregations which dwelt, or rather lurked, in the remoter provinces. But this handful of Christians is now no more ^h."

The Mahometan tyranny almost extinguished all literature amongst the Greeks and other Eastern people; whilst on the contrary, the Liberal Arts and Sciences flourished amongst the Latins.

Before the arrival of the Greeks in Italy, Aristotle was the favourite Philosopher, extolled beyond measure, and

^h Mosheim, p. 606.

almost

almost adored as a Saint. But some of the learned Greeks taught their disciples to prefer to the wrangling science of the Peripatetics the placid and polite and divine wisdom, as they called it, of Plato. Hence arose two sects of Philosophers in Italy, contending whether Aristotle or Plato should have the preference; whilst others valued both equally, and endeavoured to reconcile their doctrines.

The Aristotelics however were superior; and following the notions of Averroes, who held that all mankind participated of one common intellect or soul, they craftily subverted the foundations of religion both natural and revealed, and were very little distant from the impiety of those who think that God is the *το παν*, or the Universe, consisting of infinite Matter endued with an infinite power of cogitation. When they were pressed by the Inquisitors, they distinguished between Philoso-

ⁱ Bayle adopted this same subterfuge, and made great use of it; for he stood in great need of it.

phical and Theological Truth, or Reason and Revelation, and said that a proposition might be Philosophically true, though Theologically false.

No eminent Doctor or writer of this age can be named, who did not lament the miserable state of Christianity, and foretel its total ruin, unless the divine Providence interposed. The vices of the Popes, and of the Ecclesiastics in general, were so notorious, that no one dared to reprove such querulous writers or talkers. The superior Clergy, who passed their days in sloth and debauchery, were obliged to hear with a placid countenance, and even to applaud those Preachers who said that the Church was mortally sick from the head to the feet, and stood in need of the most violent remedies. For he was reckoned to be the best and the honestest Preacher, who used the greatest liberty in censuring the Court of Rome, the Pope, and all his crew.

All the attempts of the Popes, from the taking of Constantinople to this day,

day, to bring about an union between the Greeks and the Latins, have been quite useless. The former hate the Latins and the Latin Pontiffs more than ever, being persuaded that if the Western Christians would have succoured them, they would not have fallen under the cruel dominion of the Turks^k."

A. 1501. "The Spaniards and Portuguese, if you will believe their own writers, have not been less successful than sedulous in propagating the Gospel in foreign parts. It must be owned indeed that a sort of Christianity, such as it is, hath been introduced by them into the one and the other America, a part of Afric, and the maritime provinces and islands of Asia, which they subdued in their naval expeditions; and many of the inhabitants of these regions, who had been either void of religion, or addicted to gross and frantic superstition, seem to profess themselves servants of Christ.^l But this increase of Christia-

^k Mosheim, p. 608—634.

nity, far from deserving to be extolled, is rather to be lamented by those who consider that these unhappy people were compelled to renounce their old opinions by wicked laws and more than brutish cruelty; and that their present religion consists in paying a blind obedience to their stupid Teachers practicing some frivolous ceremonies, and uttering by rote a few words which they understand not. This is the judgment not only of those whom the Church of Rome calls Heretics, but of the worthiest persons of her Communion, French, Germans, Italians, Spaniards, and others¹."

"Amongst those, who are supposed to have been enemies to all religion, are placed Petrus Pomponatius, Bodinus, Rabelais, Montagne, Des Perieres, Doletus, Charron, Leo X. Bembo, Politianus, Brunus, Ochinus, Paracelsus, Taurellus. Some have affirmed that there were Schools of impiety and atheism in France and in Italy, whence

¹ Mosheim, p. 686.

many

many of these Reprobates issued forth; nor will this accusation be thought groundless by persons versed in the history of those times. Yet it will also appear, upon fair inquiry, that many of those who were thus charged with irreligion were either innocent, or not altogether profane to such a degree ^m."

"The most eminent amongst the Learned were those who addicted themselves to publishing, correcting and explaining Greek and Latin Authors, studying Antiquities, and composing in verse and prose. Their works are still held in high esteem, and shew the extensive knowledge, indefatigable industry, and bright abilities of these men, who accounted all true wisdom and the welfare both of Church and State to depend entirely upon such studies. Though some of them carried these notions too far, in behalf of their beloved occupations, yet it needs must be acknowledged that polite literature tended to open and enlarge the mind, and to ref-

^m Mosheim, p. 688.

cue Reason and Religion from the bondage under which they had so long laboured.

To these Philologers are to be added the Philosophers, who may be ranged under two classes. Some pursued knowledge and the nature of things in the Metaphysical way, others in the Experimental way. And again, some followed the old guides and masters; others struck out Systems for themselves. They who were disciples of the Ancients adhered either to Plato, who still had many approvers, especially in Italy, or to Aristotle. Amongst the innovators were Cardan, Telesius, and Campanella; whilst Paracelsus, and others like him, raised a new Sect of men called *Philosophi per ignem*, or *Theosophi*, who allowed very little to human reason, or to metaphysical disquisitions, but ascribed all to Experimental and Chemical Philosophy, and to a divine Illuminationⁿ.

ⁿ Mosheim, p. 689.

Luther's attack upon the Romanists obliged his adversaries to seek out new methods of defending themselves. The Croisades could no long be kept up, and some other devices were necessary to supply that loss. The Inquisition therefore was strengthened by new laws and regulations, and became still more formidable and tyrannical. Many Colleges were founded, in which young Students were to be instructed in all the arts of religious controversy. Dangerous Books were suppressed or mangled by the *Indices Expurgatorii*. The Clergy were exhorted to pursue learned studies; and considerable rewards were conferred on those who signalized themselves that way. The Romish Ecclesiastics would probably have slept in sloth and ignorance, if the Heretics had not attacked them so warmly. At length arose the Jesuits, the Pope's most zealous advocates and soldiers; a Sect founded by an illiterate Fanatic and Lunatic°.

° See Mosheim, p. 697, &c.

A. 1503. Julius II. was made Pope. I have given some ^P account of him; and shall only add that even this detestable Pontiff hath found a Panegyrist in Ubertus Folietta, who was so void of shame as to extol and canonize this his Countryman, in the ^q *Clarorum Ligurum Elogia*.

A. 1517. Luther now began the heroic work of the Reformation; and here I end my Remarks on Ecclesiastical History.

^P Life of Erasimus.

^q P. 28.

T H E E N D.



